This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY STANFORD
F38 .L67 1859 1 STOR
The physiology of common life / by Georg
24503387969

LANE

EDICAL LIBRARY

SEAL OF THE LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY
SEMPER VIRENS
1885

EVI COOPER LANE FUND

LIBRARY

YOUNG MEN'S

CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION

OF THE

CITY OF NEW YORK.

12.A.58

402

H. L. Mansel

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
STANFORD UNIVERSITY
MEDICAL CENTER
STANFORD, CALIF. 94305

LANE
MEDICAL LIBRARY
SEAL OF THE LELAND STANFORD JUNIOR UNIVERSITY
SEMPER VIRENS
1885
LEVI COOPER LANE FUND

LIBRARY

YOUNG MEN'S
CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION
OF THE
CITY OF NEW YORK.

612.L58

402

H. L. Mansel

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
STANFORD UNIVERSITY
MEDICAL CENTER
STANFORD, CALIF. 94305

THE

PHYSIOLOGY OF COMMON LIFE

THE

PHYSIOLOGY OF COMMON LIFE

LANE LIBRARY

BY

GEORGE HENRY LEWES

Author of "Seaside Studies," "Life of Goethe," &c.

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOL. I.

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
14517
SAN FRANCISCO

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS
EDINBURGH AND LONDON
MDCCCLIX

7.

012 L58 v1

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS, EDINBURGH.

7
9

CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

HUNGER AND THIRST.

Page

Incentives to action—Cause of hunger: waste and repair of the body—Periodicity of hunger—Comparison of the organism with a steam-engine inaccurate—The blood of starving men—Starvation—Cases of prolonged fasting in animals—Fabulous stories of long fasting in men and women—Aspects of starvation—The parts of the body which first disappear in starvation—Sleeplessness of starving men—Agonies of starvation—Pathetic stories—The sensation of hunger, and its cause—Hunger as a general, and as a local, sensation—Thirst as a sensation—Cause of thirst—Necessity of water in the organism, and consequences of deficiency—Thirst as a mode of torture—Story of the Black Hole of Calcutta—How to quench thirst—The drink of animals—Effects of thirst, ... 1

CHAPTER II.

FOOD AND DRINK.

SECTION I.—ON THE NATURE OF FOOD.

Varieties of food—The eaters of clay—The chemical and physiological methods of investigation—"One man's meat another man's poison," illustrated—A caution to parents—Wholesome and unwholesome food—Relation of food to the organism—Vital process incapable of chemical explanation—Difference between chemistry and physiology—A canon of philosophy—Is the family a type of the State?—Chemical problems are quantitative; physiological problems qualitative—Liebig's classification

Page

of food into plastic and respiratory not acceptable — Liebig's error arises from his taking the chemical point of view—Facts against him—Experiments on animals—The rice-eating Hindoos—the food in cold countries—Results of inquiry—Inorganic food—Nutrition in plants and animals misunderstood—Phosphate of lime in the body; amount of water in the body; amount of salt—Uses of salt—The law of endosmosis. 51

CHAPTER II.

(*Continued.*)

FOOD AND DRINK.

SECTION II.—ALIMENTARY PRINCIPLES.

Effect of different conditions in substances — Life interferes to disturb ordinary chemical actions—Effect of Form—Food considered chemically and physiologically—Blood as a standard of food—Milk as a standard—Albumen—Fibrine—Casein—The protein bodies—Gluten—Gelatine, is it nutritious?—History of the inquiry—Fats and oils; their digestibility in various conditions—Starch as food—Sugar—Does sugar injure the teeth?—Alcohol as food—Teetotalism—Iron as food—Acids, do they prevent scurvy?—Does vinegar keep people thin? 109

CHAPTER II.

(*Continued.*)

FOOD AND DRINK.

SECTION III.—ARTICLES OF FOOD.

Meats—The flavouring substance of meat, *osmazome*—The flesh of young animals—The age of animals in relation to the digestibility of their flesh—Effects of roasting, boiling, and baking—German and French meat—Digestibility of different meats—Sweetbread and tripe—Horse-flesh as food: experiments to establish the excellence of horse-beef—Quantities of horse-flesh consumed in various countries—The flesh of donkeys—Fish: digestibility of different kinds—Nutritive quality of fish—Are fish-eaters unusually prolific?—Eggs—Pastry: is it injurious?—Vegetables—Vegetarianism—Tea, coffee, and the narcotics: curious physiological paradox of their action—The quantity of food requisite for man—Individual varieties in the quantity needed—Error of applying arithmetic to vital problems—The gluttony of some races—Does a cold climate produce inordinate eating?—The rations of paupers and soldiers. 151

CHAPTER III.

DIGESTION AND INDIGESTION.

Page

Happiness and misery connected with the Digestion—In what is science distinguished from ordinary knowledge?—The mechanical and chemical processes of Digestion: the former only exists in the simplest animals—What takes place in the mouth—Chemical action of the saliva—Its mechanical action—"Bolting" the food—Mechanical action of the stomach—The gastric juice: its composition and origin—Pepsin and acid—Action of gastric juice on various substances—It arrests putrefaction—Lesson against over-eating—Influence of fats in Digestion—Influence of saliva in increasing the gastric juice—Quantity of gastric juice—Chymification equivalent to boiling—Why the gastric juice does not act upon the stomach itself—Intestinal Digestion—The bile: quantity and composition of; how affected by fats—What is meant by biliousness?—The part played by bile—It neutralises the action of gastric juice, and assists in the absorption of fat—The pancreatic juice acts on all substances—The intestinal juice completes Digestion—Nature of chyle—The various Causes of Indigestion, ... 190

CHAPTER IV.

THE STRUCTURE AND USES OF OUR BLOOD.

Blood the river of life—Erroneous notions about medicines "purifying" the blood—How it circulates—Capillary vessels—The substances it carries: iron and soap—The blood-discs: their discovery by Malpighi and Leeuwenhoek—Hewson's researches—Size of the discs in various animals—The nucleus—The colourless corpuscles: analogy between them and the Amœbæ—What is an Amœba?—The parasite which lives in our blood—Development of blood-cells—Is the blood alive?—Coagulation and its cause—Chemical composition of the blood—Variations of, in different people—Differences between arterial and venous blood—The gases they contain—Cause of the change of colour—The marvel of the circulation—Quantity of our blood—Blood-letting—Transfusion: history of the attempts; when it may be successfully employed—Blood does *not* form the organs—Vivifying elements of blood: arterial nourishes, and venous excites the tissues—Oxygen as a condition of nutrition—How does the blood nourish?—Each organ determining the nutrition of the rest—Relation between circulation and assimilation, ... 239

CHAPTER V.

CIRCULATION OF THE BLOOD: ITS HISTORY, COURSE, AND CAUSES.

Page

Was Harvey the discoverer of the circulation?—Course taken by the blood—History of seventeen centuries—Three errors removed by Galen, Vesalius, and Colombo—What then remained for Harvey?—Discovery of the valves—Exaggeration of their importance: veins without valves—Discovery of the fact of the circulation—Reception of the discovery by contemporaries—Deficiencies in Harvey's doctrine—Discovery of the capillary vessels: their structure and uses—Discovery of the lymphatics—Harvey's opposition to it—Statement of Harvey's real claims—The cause of the circulation—Influence of the heart; not the sole cause—Rapidity of circulation—Circulation in absence of the heart—Motions of the heart; cause thereof; nerves and ganglia of the heart—The heart continuing to beat after death—Action of the Arteries—Circulation in the capillaries—Draper's hypothesis—Spallanzani's observations—Circulation and Respiration, ... 291

CHAPTER VI.

RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

Two suicides—Suffocation of seventy-two persons on board the "Londonderry"—History of our knowledge of respiration—The air we breathe—Distinction between respiration as an Animal Function and as a Property of Tissue—Oxygen the life-giver—Varnished eggs will not develop; tail of a tadpole developing after separation from the body—The breathing-mechanism in various animals—The process of breathing—Tight-lacing—Alterations of the air in respiration—Necessity of ventilation—German taverns—How the organism accustoms itself to bad air—Effect of bad air in depressing the vital functions—Respiration a vital, not a physical, problem—Suffocation: various forms of—Carbonic acid not a poison—Oxide of carbon a poison: its effects on the blood—Deaths by suffocation: escape of gas: drowning—Respiration not a process of oxidation—The balance of nature—Trees not beneficial in streets—Varieties of animal respiration—Respiration during sleep—Effect of temperature on respiration—Why do we breathe? 3

CHAPTER VII.

WHY WE ARE WARM, AND HOW WE KEEP SO.

Page

Animals have a temperature of their own—This not owing to a "Vital Principle"—Description of the various instruments employed in measuring animal heat—Mistake of supposing that there are cold-blooded and warm-blooded animals—Man preserves his temperature in all climates and all seasons—His power of enduring great heat—The cooling apparatus of his organism—Perspiration carries off superfluous heat—Difference between feeling hot and being hot—Influence of age, sex, and food on our temperature—Young animals cannot well resist cold—The notion of "hardening" infants erroneous—Is food warmth?—Influence of the seasons—Effect of a cold wind—Why is the east wind felt to be cold?—Where is cold dangerous?—Can cold water be drunk with safety when we are hot?—The theory of animal heat—Respiration is not the cause of animal heat—Heat in dead bodies—Relation between respiration and animal heat in various classes of animals—Hybernating animals—Frogs and tritons in winter and summer, ... 405

CHAPTER V.

CIRCULATION OF THE BLOOD: ITS HISTORY, (AND CAUSES.

Was Harvey the discoverer of the circulation?—Course taken b —History of seventeen centuries—Three errors removed by G lius, and Colombo—What then remained for Harvey?—Disc valves—Exaggeration of their importance: veins without v covery of the fact of the circulation—Reception of the d contemporaries—Deficiencies in Harvey's doctrine—Discov capillary vessels: their structure and uses—Discovery of the —Harvey's opposition to it—Statement of Harvey's real d cause of the circulation—Influence of the heart; not the m Rapidity of circulation—Circulation in absence of the heart— the heart; cause thereof; nerves and ganglia of the heart- continuing to beat after death—Action of the Arteries—Cir the capillaries—Draper's hypothesis—Spallanzani's observatio lation and Respiration, ...

CHAPTER VI.

RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

Two suicides—Suffocation of seventy-two persons on board the derry"—History of our knowledge of respiration—The air we Distinction between respiration as an Animal Function and as of Tissue—Oxygen the life-giver—Varnished eggs will not de of a tadpole developing after separation from the body—The mechanism in various animals—The process of breathing—T —Alterations of the air in respiration—Necessity of ventilatio taverns—How the organism accustoms itself to bad air—Ef air in depressing the vital functions—Respiration a vital, not problem—Suffocation: various forms of—Carbonic acid not —Oxide of carbon a poison: its effects on the blood—Deaths tion: escape of gas: drowning—Respiration not a process of o The balance of nature—Trees not beneficial in streets—V animal respiration—Respiration during sleep—Effect of temp respiration—Why do we breathe? . . . . .

CHAPTER VII.

ARE WARM, AND HOW WE KEEP SO.

perature of their own—This not owing to a Vital [illegible]
ion of the various instruments employed [illegible]
stake of supposing that there are [illegible]
imals—Man preserves his temperature [illegible]
His power of enduring great heat—The [illegible]
n—Perspiration carries off superfluous heat—[illegible]
hot and being hot—Influence of age, sex, and food [illegible]
-Young animals cannot well resist cold—The [illegible]
fants erroneous—Is food warmth?—Influence of the
f a cold wind—Why is the east wind [illegible]
gerous?—Can cold water be drunk with safety [illegible]
eory of animal heat—Respiration is not the [illegible]
at in dead bodies—Relation between [illegible]
rious classes of animals—Hybernating animals [illegible]
nter and summer. [illegible]

CHAPTER V.

CIRCULATION OF THE BLOOD: ITS HISTORY, C AND CAUSES.

Was Harvey the discoverer of the circulation?—Course taken by
—History of seventeen centuries—Three errors removed by
lius, and Colombo—What then remained for Harvey?—Disco
valves—Exaggeration of their importance: veins without
covery of the fact of the circulation—Reception of the dis
contemporaries—Deficiencies in Harvey's doctrine—Discov
capillary vessels: their structure and uses—Discovery of the
—Harvey's opposition to it—Statement of Harvey's real
cause of the circulation—Influence of the heart: not the
Rapidity of circulation—Circulation in absence of the heart—
the heart; cause thereof; nerves and ganglia of the heart—
continuing to beat after death—Action of the Arteries—Cir
the capillaries—Draper's hypothesis—Spallanzani's observatio
lation and Respiration.

CHAPTER VI.

RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

Two suicides—Suffocation of seventy-two persons on board the
dery?—History of our knowledge of respiration—The air we
Distinction between respiration as an Animal Function and as
of Tissue—Oxygen the life-giver—Varnished eggs will not de
of a tadpole developing after separation from the body—The
mechanism in various animals—The process of breathing—T
—Alterations of the air in respiration—Necessity of ventilation
sewers—How the organism accustoms itself to bad air—Ef
air in depressing the vital functions—Respiration a vital, not
problem—Suffocation: various forms of—Carbonic acid not
—Oxide of carbon a poison: its effects on the blood—Deaths
tion: escape of gas: drowning—Respiration not a process of
The balance of nature—Trees not beneficial in streets—V
animal respiration—Respiration during sleep—Effect of tem
respiration—Why do we breathe?

CHAPTER V.

CIRCULATION OF THE BLOOD: ITS HISTORY, COURSE, AND CAUSES.

Page

Was Harvey the discoverer of the circulation?—Course taken by the blood—History of seventeen centuries—Three errors removed by Galen, Vesalius, and Colombo—What then remained for Harvey?—Discovery of the valves—Exaggeration of their importance: veins without valves—Discovery of the fact of the circulation—Reception of the discovery by contemporaries—Deficiencies in Harvey's doctrine—Discovery of the capillary vessels: their structure and uses—Discovery of the lymphatics—Harvey's opposition to it—Statement of Harvey's real claims—The cause of the circulation—Influence of the heart; not the sole cause—Rapidity of circulation—Circulation in absence of the heart—Motions of the heart; cause thereof; nerves and ganglia of the heart—The heart continuing to beat after death—Action of the Arteries—Circulation in the capillaries—Draper's hypothesis—Spallanzani's observations—Circulation and Respiration, ... 291

CHAPTER VI.

RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

Two suicides—Suffocation of seventy-two persons on board the "Londonderry"—History of our knowledge of respiration—The air we breathe—Distinction between respiration as an Animal Function and as a Property of Tissue—Oxygen the life-giver—Varnished eggs will not develop; tail of a tadpole developing after separation from the body—The breathing-mechanism in various animals—The process of breathing—Tight-lacing—Alterations of the air in respiration—Necessity of ventilation—German taverns—How the organism accustoms itself to bad air—Effect of bad air in depressing the vital functions—Respiration a vital, not a physical, problem—Suffocation: various forms of—Carbonic acid not a poison—Oxide of carbon a poison: its effects on the blood—Deaths by suffocation: escape of gas: drowning—Respiration not a process of oxidation—The balance of nature—Trees not beneficial in streets—Varieties of animal respiration—Respiration during sleep—Effect of temperature on respiration—Why do we breathe? 3

CHAPTER VII.

WHY WE ARE WARM, AND HOW WE KEEP SO.

Page

Animals have a temperature of their own—This not owing to a "Vital Principle"—Description of the various instruments employed in measuring animal heat—Mistake of supposing that there are cold-blooded and warm-blooded animals—Man preserves his temperature in all climates and all seasons—His power of enduring great heat—The cooling apparatus of his organism—Perspiration carries off superfluous heat—Difference between feeling hot and being hot—Influence of age, sex, and food on our temperature—Young animals cannot well resist cold—The notion of "hardening" infants erroneous—Is food warmth?—Influence of the seasons—Effect of a cold wind—Why is the east wind felt to be cold?—Where is cold dangerous?—Can cold water be drunk with safety when we are hot?—The theory of animal heat—Respiration is not the cause of animal heat—Heat in dead bodies—Relation between respiration and animal heat in various classes of animals—Hybernating animals—Frogs and tritons in winter and summer, ... 405

THE

PHYSIOLOGY OF COMMON LIFE.

CHAPTER I.

HUNGER AND THIRST.

Incentives to action—Cause of hunger: waste and repair of the body—Periodicity of hunger—Comparison of the organism with a steam-engine inaccurate—The blood of starving men—Starvation—Cases of prolonged fasting in animals—Fabulous stories of long fasting in men and women—Aspects of starvation—The parts of the body which first disappear in starvation—Sleeplessness of starving men—Agonies of starvation—Pathetic stories—The sensation of hunger, and its cause—Hunger as a general, and as a local, sensation—Thirst as a sensation—Cause of thirst—Necessity of water in the organism, and consequences of deficiency—Thirst as a mode of torture—Story of the Black Hole of Calcutta—How to quench thirst—The drink of animals—Effects of thirst.

HUNGER is one of the beneficent and terrible instincts. It is, indeed, the very fire of life, underlying all impulses to labour, and moving man to noble activities by its imperious demands. Look where we may, we see it as the motive power which sets the vast array of human machinery in action.

It is Hunger which brings these stalwart navvies together in orderly gangs to cut paths through mountains, to throw bridges across rivers, to intersect the land with the great iron ways which bring city into daily communication with city. Hunger is the invisible overseer of the men who are erecting palaces, prison-houses, barracks, and villas. Hunger sits at the loom, which with stealthy power is weaving the wondrous fabrics of cotton and silk. Hunger labours at the furnace and the plough, coercing the native indolence of man into strenuous and incessant activity. Let food be abundant and easy of access, and civilisation becomes impossible: so indissolubly dependent are our higher efforts on our lower impulses. Nothing but the necessities of food will force man to that labour which he hates, and will always avoid when he can. And although this seems obvious only when applied to the labouring classes, it is equally though less obviously true when applied to all other classes, for the money we all labour to gain is nothing but food, and the surplus of food, which will buy other men's labour.

Hunger, although beneficent, is no less terrible. When its progress is unchecked, it becomes a devouring flame, destroying all that is most noble in man. Hunger is a stimulus to crime, no less than to honest labour. It wanders through dark alleys, whispering desperate thoughts into eager ears; and it maddens the shipwrecked crew till they cast away all shame, all pity, all desire of respect, and perpetrate deeds which cannot be mentioned without horror. Hunger subjugates the humanity in man, and makes the brute predominate. Impelled by this ferocious instinct, men have eaten their companions, and women have even eaten their own children. Hunger has thus a twofold character: beside the picture of the activities it inspires, we must also contemplate the picture of the ferocities it evokes.

What is this Hunger—what its causes and effects?

In one sense we may all be said to know what Hunger is; in another sense no man can enlighten us; we have all felt it, but Science as yet has been unable to furnish any sufficient explanation of it. Between the gentle and agreeable stimulus known as Appetite, and the agony of Starvation, there are infinite gradations. The early stages are familiar even to the wealthy; but only the very poor, or those who have undergone exceptional calamities, such as shipwreck and the like, know anything of the later stages. We all know what it is to be hungry, even *very* hungry; but the terrible approaches of protracted hunger are exceptional experiences. From materials furnished by sad experiences, both familiar and exceptional, I will endeavour to state the capital phenomena and their causes.

And first we must explain what is meant by a *tissue*, as the word will be of constant recurrence in these pages. Previous to the time of Bichât, who may be called the founder of philosophical anatomy, the body was considered as made up of various parts or organs; when these parts had been enumerated, the task of description was over. Bichât flashed light upon the science when he showed that the organs themselves were made up of various tissues, or elementary structures, each of which preserved its characteristic properties in whatever part of the body it might be found. Thus the heart, for instance, is an organ constructed out of muscular tissue, connective tissue, nervous tissue, and adipose tissue—each of these tissues manifesting the same properties in the heart which it manifests in every other organ; just as the various substances out of which a ship is constructed—wood, hemp, copper, iron, tar, &c.—preserve their characteristic properties, though the wood may be rudder, deck, or mast, and the iron anchor, nail, or cable.

The tissues are the elementary portions of the animal fabric; and a distinct branch of the science is devoted to their study under the name of *Histology*, also called *General* Anatomy. The organism is composed of organs, and the organs of tissues.

I. The Cause of Hunger.—In every living organism there is an incessant and reciprocal activity of *waste* and *repair*. The living fabric, in the very actions which constitute its life, is momently yielding up its particles to destruction, like the coal which is burned in the furnace: so much coal to so much heat, so much waste of tissue to so much vital activity. You cannot wink your eye, move your finger, or think a thought, but some minute particle of your substance must be sacrificed in doing so. Unless the coal which is burning be from time to time replaced, the fire soon smoulders, and finally goes out; unless the substance of your body, which is wasting, be from time to time furnished with fresh food, Life flickers, and at length becomes extinct.

Hunger is the instinct which teaches us to replenish the empty furnace.

But although the want of food, necessary to repair the waste of life, is the primary cause of Hunger, it does not, as is often erroneously stated, in itself constitute Hunger. The absence of necessary food causes the sensation, but it is not itself the sensation. Food may be absent without any sensation, such as we express by the word Hunger, being felt: insane people frequently subject themselves to prolonged abstinence from food, without any hungry cravings; and, in a lesser degree, it is familiar to us all how any violent emotion of grief or joy will completely destroy, not only the sense of Hunger, but our possibility of even swallowing the food which an hour before was cravingly desired. Further, it is known that the feeling of Hunger may be allayed by opium, tobacco, or even by inorganic substances introduced into the stomach, although none of these can supply the deficiency of food. Want of food is therefore the *primary*, but not the *proximate*, cause of Hunger. I am using the word Hunger in its popular sense here, as indicating that specific sensation which impels us to eat; when the subject has been more fully unfolded, the reader will see how far this popular sense of the word is applicable to all the phenomena.

We can now understand why Hunger should recur periodically, and with a frequency in proportion to the demands of nutrition. Young animals demand food more frequently than the adult; birds and mammalia more frequently than reptiles and fishes. A lethargic boa-constrictor will only feed about once a-month, a lively rabbit twenty times a-day. Temperature has also its influence on the frequency of the recurrence: cold excites the appetite of warm-blooded animals, but diminishes that of the cold-blooded, the majority of which cease to take any food at the temperature of freezing. Those warm-blooded animals which present the curious phenomenon of "winter sleep," resemble the cold-blooded animals in this respect; during hybernation they need no food, because almost all the vital actions are suspended. It is found that, at the temperature of freezing, even digestion is suspended. Hunter fed lizards at the commencement of winter, and from time to time opened them, without perceiving any indications of digestion having gone on; and when spring returned, those lizards which were still living, vomited the food which they had retained undigested in their stomachs during the whole winter.*

Besides the usual conditions of recurring appetite, there are some unusual conditions, depending on peculiarities in the individual, or on certain states of the organism. Thus during convalescence after some maladies, especially fevers, the appetite is almost incessant; and Admiral Byron relates that, after suffering from a month's starvation during a shipwreck, he and his companions, when on shore, were not content with gorging themselves while at table, but filled their pockets that they might eat during the intervals of meals. In certain diseases there is a craving for food which no supplies allay ; but of this we need not speak here.

---

* HUNTER: *Observations on Certain Parts of the Animal Economy.*

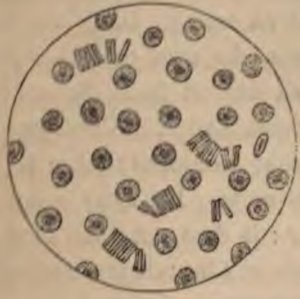
The animal body is often compared with a steam-engine, of which the *food* is the *fuel* in the furnace, furnishing the motor-power. As an illustration, this may be acceptable enough, but, like many other illustrations, it is often accepted for a real analogy, a true expression of the facts. As an analogy, its failure is conspicuous. No engine burns its *own substance* as fuel : its motor-power is all derived from the coke which is burning in the furnace, and is in direct proportion to the amount of coke consumed ; when the coke is exhausted, the engine stops. But every organism consumes its own body : it does not burn food, but tissue. The fervid wheels of Life were made out of food, and in their action motor-power is evolved.

The difference between the organism and the mechanism is this : the production of heat in the organism is not the *cause* of its activity, but the *result* of it ; whereas in the mechanism, the activity originates in, and is sustained by, the heat. Remove the coals which generate the steam, and you immediately arrest the action of the mechanism ; but long after all the food has disappeared, and become transformed into the solids and liquids of the living fabric, the organism continues to manifest all the powers which it manifested before.

There is of course a limit to this continuance, inasmuch as vital activity is dependent on the destruction of tissue. The man who takes no food, lives, like a spendthrift, on his capital, and cannot survive his capital. He is observed to get thin, pale, and feeble, because he is spending without replenishing his coffers; he is gradually *impoverishing* himself, because Life is waste.

II. THE EFFECTS OF HUNGER.—In a future chapter we shall inquire minutely into the structure and composition of the Blood; for the present, it must suffice to say that the Blood carries in its current certain bodies called blood-discs, which perform the chief part in nutrition. They are of two kinds, the red and the colourless. Here is the figure of the red discs, as seen under the microscope.

Fig. 1.



BLOOD-DISCS.

If we examine the blood of a starving man, we shall find its elementary composition to be precisely similar to that of the same man in his healthy state, but the *proportions* of that composition will be greatly altered; the discs—which have been denominated the nutritive solids of the blood—are much diminished in quantity, and all its inorganic constituents, which are the products of destroyed tissues, are much increased. In fact, these inorganic products, like the pawn-tickets found in the spendthrift's desk, are significant of the extravagance and the poverty which point to ruin.

We cannot say how long such a spendthrift life may continue, because Time has no definite relation to the phenomena of starvation; these phenomena depend on certain specific changes going on in the body, which may occur with indefinite rapidity. Within the same period of time the *whole cycle of change* necessary for destruction may have completed itself, or *only a few of the stages* in this cycle may have been gone through: a man under certain conditions will not survive six days' fasting, and under other conditions he will survive six weeks'.

But if we cannot with any precision say *how long* starvation will be in effecting its fatal end, we can say *how much* waste is fatal. From the celebrated experiments of Chossat on Inanition,* it appears that death arrives whenever the waste reaches an average proportion of two-fifths. That is to say, supposing an animal to weigh 100 lb., it will succumb when its weight is reduced to 60 lb. Life may of course cease before that point is reached, but cannot, in ordinary circumstances, be prolonged after it.

The average loss which can be sustained is 40 per cent; sometimes the loss is greater, especially if the animal be very fat: thus in the *Transactions of the Linnæan Society*, a case is reported of a fat pig which was buried under thirty feet of chalk for one hundred and sixty days; his weight fell in that period no less than 75 per cent. Curiously enough, as an illustration of what was just said respecting Time not being an index of the amount of change, fishes and reptiles were found by Chossat to perish at precisely the same limit of *weight* as that at which warm-blooded animals perished, but they required a period three-and-twenty times as long to reach it in: thus if the experiment be performed of starving a bird and a frog during the warm weather, although both will perish when their loss of weight reaches 40 per cent, the one will not survive a week, the other will survive three-and-twenty weeks.

---

* CHOSSAT: *Recherches Expérimentales sur l'Inanition.* 1843.

It appears from Chossat's observations that the animal body daily wastes one twenty-fourth of its entire weight; and this accords very closely with the experiments of Bidder and Schmidt, which show that the animal requires at least one twenty-third of its entire weight in daily assimilable food, otherwise it will lose in substance.*

III. Prolonged Fasting.—Having clearly fixed these principles, we may proceed to consider the many remarkable cases of *prolonged fasting* which appeal to the credulity of the public, and which find a place even in very grave treatises, as well as in the less critical columns of newspapers. Are we to believe these marvels, or reject them? and on what grounds are we justified in rejecting them? Such questions the reader will frequently be called upon to answer; and as a contribution towards the formation of a definite and philosophical judgment, here are some of the most striking cases on record, and the physiological principles implied in them.

---

* Bidder ŭ. Schmidt: *Die Verdauungssäfte und der Stoffwechsel*, 1852.

The human body is in many respects so different from that of animals, especially in its complexity, that we can draw no very accurate conclusion from *their* powers of enduring abstinence; but after all, the differences will only be differences of degree, and the same physiological laws must regulate both, so that we may be certain of the effect of abstinence on man not being *essentially* dissimilar to that on all other warm-blooded animals.

Let us therefore first see how the case stands with animals. The experiments of Pommer establish that carnivorous animals resist starvation longer than the herbivorous; birds of prey longer than birds feeding on seeds and fruits.

I think we might *a priori* have deduced this conclusion from the known differences in the *intervals* of recurring Hunger, and in the different quantities of food eaten by the two classes. The carnivorous animal eats voraciously when food is within reach, but having satisfied his appetite, he remains several hours before again feeling hungry; and in a state of nature the intervals between his meals are necessarily variable, and often much prolonged, because his food is neither abundant nor easy of access. The herbivorous animal, on the other hand, has his food constantly within reach, and is almost always eating, because an enormous amount of vegetable food is needed to furnish him with sustenance. The lion, or the cat, becomes inured to long abstinence; the rabbit or the cow scarcely knows the feeling. It is clear, therefore, that the one will better endure long fasting than the other.

Chossat's experiments on eight-and-forty birds and animals, show that the average duration of life exceeded nine days and a half—the maximum being twenty days and a half, the minimum a little more than two days.

The young always die first, the adult before the aged; this is true of men as of animals.

Some of the simpler animals exhibit remarkable powers of endurance. Latreille pinned a spider to a cork, and after four months found it still alive. Baker kept a stag-beetle three years in a box without food, and at the end of that period it flew away. Müller relates that a scorpion not only survived the voyage from Africa to Holland, but continued without food for nine months afterwards. Rondelet kept a fish three years without food, and Rudolphi a *Proteus anguineus* five years! Snakes, we know, live for many months without eating; and Redi found that a seal lived, out of water and without food, four weeks.

In all these cases, except that of the fish kept by Rondelet, the animals were quiescent, and did not waste their substance by the ordinary activities; and with regard to the fish, some doubts may be entertained whether it did not find worms and larvæ in the water.

Passing from animals to man, we find that death arrives on the fifth or sixth day of total abstinence from food and drink. But this is a general statement to which various exceptions may be named. Much depends on the peculiar constitution of the individual, his age, health, and other conditions. Some die on the second and third days; others survive till the tenth, eleventh, and even sixteenth days. Again, considerable differences will result from the different situations in which the men are placed—such as those of quiescence or activity, of temperature, moisture, &c.

The examples of protracted fasting recorded are, as usual, deficient for the most part in that rigorous authenticity which is demanded by science; many of them are obviously fabulous exaggerations. M. Bérard has borrowed the following from Haller, adding some cases which came under his own knowledge. I give them as specimens—not as data.

"A young girl, ashamed to confess her poverty, went without food for seventy-eight days, during which she only sucked lemons.

"Another woman of the same place remained four months without food, and another fasted a whole year.

"Haller reports two other cases of fasting for three and four years.

"Mackenzie reports in the *Philosophical Transactions* the story of a young girl who had lockjaw for eighteen years, and had taken no food during four years.

"A Scotchwoman is reported in the *Philosophical Transactions*, vol. lxvii., to have lived eight years without taking anything except a little water on one or two occasions.

"A case of fasting for ten years is celebrated in many works. Fabrice de Hilden, who took precautions against deception, says that Eva Flegen neither ate nor drank during six years.

"But all these stories are surpassed by that of a woman who remained fifty years without food; it is added, however, that she sometimes took skimmed milk."

"Admitting," says M. Bérard, "that there has been deception in some of these cases, and that the love of the marvellous has presided over the narration of others, we cannot refuse to believe that some are authentic. Every year such cases are registered. In 1836, M. Lavigne invited me to visit a woman of fifty-two, who, after having reduced herself to a glass of milk daily during eighteen months, had taken nothing in the shape of food or drink during the last five months. In 1839, M. Parizot communicated to me the fact of a girl at Marcilly who had taken no solid nutriment for six years, and for the last five years no liquid or solid. In 1838, M. Plongeau wrote to me to say that he had seen a woman at Ayrens, aged eight-and-forty, who during the last eight years had received no nourishment whatever." *

It is rather startling to find so learned a physiologist as M. Bérard recording such cases, and trying to explain them. The possibility of deception and exaggeration is so great, that we are tempted to reject almost every one of these cases rather than reject all physiological teaching.

---

* BÉRARD: *Cours de Physiologie*, 1848, i. 538.

The following is one of the most extraordinary of the cases which are repeated by modern writers with confidence. Janet M'Leod, after epilepsy and fever, remained five years in bed, *seldom speaking*, and receiving food only by constraint. At length she obstinately refused all sustenance, her jaws became locked, and in attempting to force them open two of her teeth were broken. A small quantity of liquid was introduced by the aperture, none of which she swallowed, and dough made of oatmeal was likewise rejected. *She slept much*, and her head was bent down on her breast. In this deplorable state she continued four years, without her relatives being aware of her receiving any aliment except a little water; but after a longer interval she revived, and subsisted on crumbs of bread with milk, or water sucked from her hand.

Attention is called to the two facts of Janet's seldom speaking and sleeping much, because, supposing the case to be true, they materially affect the question. In a state of such quiescence as is here implied, the waste of the body would be reduced to a minimum, consequently the need of food would be minimised. Nevertheless, in the present state of Physiology, I think we are justified in asserting that some deception or exaggeration, not now ascertainable, is at the bottom of this as of all similar cases; and until a case free from all suspicion shall have been produced for the satisfaction of Science, we are bound to deny the probability of such stories; since that which all our knowledge shows to be in itself contradictory, must necessarily have the highest improbability, and can only be accepted on the most rigorous evidence. Either we must give up our Physiology altogether, or we must reject these stories.

For observe, on the one hand, several of the reported cases of long fasting have been subsequently proved to be impostures, and this naturally throws a suspicion over all similar cases. On the other hand, physiological laws, established by induction from thousands of facts tested by every variety of method, pronounce these cases to be not possible; and we are called upon to decide whether it is more probable that these inductions should be wrong, or that some imposture or exaggeration should lie at the bottom of the narrated marvels. There cannot be a moment's hesitation as to which alternative we must accept; but the reader will naturally desire a clear conception of the physiological contradictions which I have asserted to be implied in these marvellous narratives—the more so as many professed physiologists do not seem to be fully aware of them.

Supposing the *waste* of the body to be reduced to a minimum by the perfect quiescence in which the patients remained, we must still bear in mind that this *diminution* is not *total arrest* of waste. The patient scarcely moves, seldom speaks, and sleeps much. Very little destruction of tissue will take place, compared with the amount destroyed by the same person in ordinary activity, and very little food will be needed to repair such waste; but although *comparatively* small, the amount of waste will be *absolutely* large; we cannot say how large it will be, we can only say that it must be large.

Let us fix our attention on only two sources of this waste, and the proof will be evident. The production of animal heat is only possible through a large amount of chemical change going on in the organism; it is produced by "direct combustion" (according to the chemical school of physiologists), by "the disengagement of heat in chemical compositions and decompositions" (according to another school), and according to all schools the high temperature of the body depends on organic processes, which necessarily imply waste of tissue. The warmth of the bed in which the patient lies is not sufficient to preserve her temperature at its proper height; she must burn her own substance to keep up her animal heat; and when we think of the high degree of temperature maintained during a period of four years, solely by the combustion of the body itself, we shall see at once that it is utterly *impossible* any organism, during so long a period, could sustain such waste without repair.

Here, then, is the dilemma: either Janet M'Leod *did* maintain the ordinary temperature of the body during these four years, in which case she must have destroyed more tissue to produce that heat than the body could lose without cessation of life; or she did *not* maintain the ordinary temperature, in which case she would have died from the very want of this animal heat, since all organisms perish when their normal temperature is considerably lowered.

Let us now consider the second source of waste. Janet breathed during these four years; gently, we may suppose, and with no deep inspirations, yet constantly, day and night without interruption. Now, what does this breathing depend on? It depends on the constant interchange between carbonic acid in the blood, and oxygen in the air. Unless there were carbonic acid in the blood, no exchange could take place, no breathing could be effected.* Every moment, therefore, some small portion of carbonic acid must be separated from the blood, and replaced by oxygen. Whence came this carbonic acid? From destruction of tissue. Directly, or indirectly, carbonic acid was produced in the act of waste. Its presence implies waste, and the act of breathing implies a continuous supply of such waste.

That this is no hypothesis, but the simple expression of the facts, every physiologist knows. It may be rendered generally intelligible by referring to what is observed with the hybernating animals. The dormouse begins its winter sleep well clothed with fat. It never moves for months; its respiration is slow and feeble, but it does breathe, and the waste of its tissues which this breathing causes is very noticeable at the close of winter. Now, if we suppose Janet to have been in a state of "suspended vitality" analogous to that of the dormouse, we shall still have to admit that her breathing alone would gradually waste her substance; and however slow that waste may be supposed, it cannot have been such that four years would not have exhausted the whole amount of available material. Every time she moved in bed, every time she spoke, every time she raised her hand, the rate of waste would be accelerated.

---

* This will be shown further on in the Chapter on RESPIRATION and SUFFOCATION.

It is found that a slug kept without food loses one-eleventh of its weight in six weeks. We cannot admit that, even in a bedridden girl, the vital activity would be slower than in a slug; and we know from Chossat's experiments that the loss of two-fifths of their weight destroys all animals.

From these general considerations, which might be multiplied, I affirm that, unless all Physiology is a delusion, the marvellous stories of four years' fasting, and the like, are impostures; and this affirmation is strengthened by all the cases in which the motive and possibility of deception are eliminated. Thus when men have voluntarily starved themselves to death, they have never survived three months. Granié, who murdered his wife, starved himself in the prison of Toulouse, and expired on the sixty-third day, during which time he drank water, and occasionally ate a little. The religious enthusiast, whom Dr Willan refers to, lived only two months, although he occasionally sucked an orange.

These men only survived thus long, because in abstaining from solid food, they did not also abstain from liquid. Life is considerably prolonged if liquid be taken. Redi found that birds kept without water as well as food lived only nine days; those to whom he gave water lived twenty days.* I cannot, however, agree with those physiologists who, like Burdach and Bérard, attribute this sustaining power of water to the organic particles suspended in it, because such an amount must necessarily be quite inadequate to supply the loss of an organism whose waste is rapid; and we must remember that an animal dies of *Thirst* even more rapidly than of Hunger; so that when water is withheld, the death is hastened by the complication of two causes. Now Janet M'Leod, and other persons said to have lived without food or drink, were under the pressure of these two causes, and sustained that pressure, we are told, four years!

We are thus forced to reject all narratives of absolute fasting prolonged over three months.

Having considered the effects of total abstinence, we may now inquire into the effects of partial abstinence.

An animal deprived of food perishes whenever its loss of weight reaches a certain point; and, curiously enough, *insufficiency of food* causes death at precisely the same point as total want of food, *i. e.* as soon as the original weight is reduced to six-tenths. Men, therefore, reduced to an insufficient allowance, whether from famine, shipwreck, or siege, will inevitably perish unless the allowance be increased; it will be as if they had received no food at all, only they will be longer before they succumb. An important lesson is contained in this fact, and one which should never be forgotten in the management of prisons, schools, or workhouses.

---

* REDI: *Osservazioni intorno agli animali viventi;* quoted by BURDACH.

IV. ASPECTS OF STARVATION.—Terrible are the aspects of starving men; and it is well that we should know these aspects, lest we be the dupes of impostors, or confound the truly wretched with the professional mendicant. The first noticeable point is the excessive thinness of starving men, which is not the leanness of lean men, but manifests itself as unmistakable emaciation. The face is always lividly pale, the cheeks are sunken, the eyes—what an expression in the eyes! never to be forgotten by those who have once seen it: all the vitality of the body seems centred there, in feverish brightness; the pupil is dilated, and the eye is fixed in a wild stare, which is never veiled by the winking lids. All movements of the body are slow and difficult: the hand trembles; the voice is feeble; intelligence seems gone; the wretched sufferers, when asked what they feel, have but one answer, "We are hungry."

There is one remarkable fact with reference to starvation which may here be noted, and that is the resistance opposed by the nervous substance to the effects of emaciation. Instead of being the first to suffer from deficient food, as its complexity and the lateness of its appearance in the animal series would lead us to suppose, the nervous tissue is the last to be affected. From the experiments of Chossat we learn that, in every 100 parts of *each* of the following substances, 93 are lost of the fat, 52 of the liver, 42 of the muscles, 16 of the bones, and only 2 of the nerve-substance, by the time starvation has terminated in death. The idea of our solid bones, principally composed of inorganic matter, losing eight times as much as our semi-liquid nerves, which are so predominantly organic in their structure, will seem very paradoxical; and the paradox is increased when we learn that, in spite of fat being beyond all proportion the most destructible tissue in the body, Von Bibra finds the fat in the brain scarcely affected in starvation, although the fat in the muscles has been greatly wasted.*

It is this which enables us hypothetically to explain the sleeplessness of men and animals suffering from hunger. A starving man has been known to remain seven days and nights without sleep. This nervous excitability, which often manifests itself as delirium, probably arises from the disengagement of the brain from those organic activities which in the normal state call so largely on its energies; for the energies of the brain are not expended only on intelligence and emotion, but likewise, and to a great extent, on the functions of nutrition and locomotion. Considering the nervous system as a centre or fountain of influence, we may detect three streams in which the influence flows—a nutritive stream, a locomotive stream, and a sensitive stream. If the demand from the nutritive stream be large, the supply to the sensitive and locomotive streams will be proportionately reduced. Deep thought, or anxiety, disturbs the digestion and circulation; violent and protracted exercise, amounting to fatigue, incapacitates for thinking: the habitually trained athlete is nearly an idiot, the over-eater little better. When, therefore, a man is starving, the amount of nervous activity usually expended on his nutritive system is disengaged; and as his feebleness diminishes his muscular activity, the amount of nervous influence usually expended on locomotion is reduced, leaving the brain, with all this surplus activity, to prey upon itself: sleeplessness and madness naturally result from this over-excitement.

---

* CANSTATT: *Jahresbericht*, 1854, p. 119.

V. Agonies of Starvation.—Respecting the agonies endured by starving men, we have little accurate information. When those who have undergone the horrors of starvation are preserved, and attempt to recount them, they cannot do more than give vague indications; for there is nothing more difficult to describe than the sensations of the digestive organs, even during the continuance of the sensation; and how difficult it is to describe them when past, may be conceived by any one who attempts to do so in his own case. Most of the narratives we have are recorded by men little accustomed to analyse their sensations, and we must be content to fix our attention on the general characteristics of these narratives. From these cases two may be selected.

Goldsmith says that the captain of a wrecked vessel told him that "he was the only person who had not lost his senses when they received accidental relief. He assured me his pains at first were so great that

he was often tempted to eat a part of the men who died, and which the rest of his crew actually lived upon. He said that, during the continuance of this paroxysm, he found his pains insupportable, and was desirous at one time of anticipating that death which he thought inevitable. But *his pains gradually ceased after the sixth day* (for they had water in the ship, which kept them alive so long), and then he was in a state rather of languor than desire; nor did he much wish for food except when he saw others eating. The latter part of the time, when his health was almost destroyed, a thousand strange images rose upon his mind, and every one of his senses began to bring him wrong information. When he was presented with food by the ship's company that took him up, he could not help looking at it with loathing instead of desire; and it was not till after four days that his stomach was brought to its natural tone, when the violence of his appetite returned with a sort of canine eagerness."*

It will doubtless seem very strange to the uninitiated that a man after prolonged fasting, when his system is in such need of food and his appetite so keen, should be nevertheless in no proper condition to eat that food, and can only arrive at the proper condition by degrees, by eating a little at a time. The fact is, however, that, like all other organs, the stomach suffers for want of regular work. In fasting, the glands no longer secrete; the blood quits the stomach; the regular activity is interrupted; and when food again calls upon the

stomach to do its old work, there is not the old vigour at command. Gradually the stimulus of food recalls the vigour of the secreting glands, and then appetite may be safely indulged.

---

* *History of the Earth*, ii. 126.

The next case is peculiarly valuable, as being the daily record of a man who voluntarily starved himself. He was a merchant, whose losses so preyed upon his mind that he resolved on suicide; and after roaming about the country from the 12th to the 15th of September 1818, he dug himself a grave in the wood, and remained there till the 3d of October, when he was found, still living, by an innkeeper. Hufeland, who records the case, says that, after an abstinence of eighteen days, the man still breathed, but expired immediately after a little soup had been forced down his throat. On his person they found a diary, written in pencil, from which the following are extracts:—

"*Sept.* 16.—The generous philanthropist who may find my corpse is requested to bury it, and to repay himself for the trouble by my clothes, my purse, my pocket-book, and knife. I have not committed suicide, but I die of starvation because bad men have deprived me of my fortune, and I do not choose to be a burden on my friends. It is unnecessary to open my body, since I have said I die of starvation.

"*Sept.* 17.—What a night I have passed! It has rained; I am wet through. I have been so cold.

"*Sept.* 18.—The cold and rain forced me to get up and walk; my walk was very feeble. Thirst made me

he was often tempted to eat a part of the men who died, and which the rest of his crew actually lived upon. He said that, during the continuance of this paroxysm, he found his pains insupportable, and was desirous at one time of anticipating that death which he thought inevitable. But *his pains gradually ceased after the sixth day* (for they had water in the ship, which kept them alive so long), and then he was in a state rather of languor than desire; nor did he much wish for food except when he saw others eating. The latter part of the time, when his health was almost destroyed, a thousand strange images rose upon his mind, and every one of his senses began to bring him wrong information. When he was presented with food by the ship's company that took him up, he could not help looking at it with loathing instead of desire; and it was not till after four days that his stomach was brought to its natural tone, when the violence of his appetite returned with a sort of canine eagerness."*

It will doubtless seem very strange to the uninitiated that a man after prolonged fasting, when his system is in such need of food and his appetite so keen, should be nevertheless in no proper condition to eat that food, and can only arrive at the proper condition by degrees, by eating a little at a time. The fact is, however, that, like all other organs, the stomach suffers for want of regular work. In fasting, the glands no longer secrete; the blood quits the stomach; the regular activity is interrupted; and when food again calls upon the

stomach to do its old work, there is not the old vigour at command. Gradually the stimulus of food recalls the vigour of the secreting glands, and then appetite may be safely indulged.

---

* *History of the Earth*, ii. 126.

The next case is peculiarly valuable, as being the daily record of a man who voluntarily starved himself. He was a merchant, whose losses so preyed upon his mind that he resolved on suicide; and after roaming about the country from the 12th to the 15th of September 1818, he dug himself a grave in the wood, and remained there till the 3d of October, when he was found, still living, by an innkeeper. Hufeland, who records the case, says that, after an abstinence of eighteen days, the man still breathed, but expired immediately after a little soup had been forced down his throat. On his person they found a diary, written in pencil, from which the following are extracts :—

" *Sept.* 16.—The generous philanthropist who may find my corpse is requested to bury it, and to repay himself for the trouble by my clothes, my purse, my pocket-book, and knife. I have not committed suicide, but I die of starvation because bad men have deprived me of my fortune, and I do not choose to be a burden on my friends. It is unnecessary to open my body, since I have said I die of starvation.

" *Sept.* 17.—What a night I have passed! It has rained; I am wet through. I have been so cold.

" *Sept.* 18.—The cold and rain forced me to get up and walk; my walk was very feeble. Thirst made me

he was often tempted to eat a part of the men who died, and which the rest of his crew actually lived upon. He said that, during the continuance of this paroxysm, he found his pains insupportable, and was desirous at one time of anticipating that death which he thought inevitable. But *his pains gradually ceased after the sixth day* (for they had water in the ship, which kept them alive so long), and then he was in a state rather of languor than desire; nor did he much wish for food except when he saw others eating. The latter part of the time, when his health was almost destroyed, a thousand strange images rose upon his mind, and every one of his senses began to bring him wrong information. When he was presented with food by the ship's company that took him up, he could not help looking at it with loathing instead of desire; and it was not till after four days that his stomach was brought to its natural tone, when the violence of his appetite returned with a sort of canine eagerness."*

It will doubtless seem very strange to the uninitiated that a man after prolonged fasting, when his system is in such need of food and his appetite so keen, should be nevertheless in no proper condition to eat that food, and can only arrive at the proper condition by degrees, by eating a little at a time. The fact is, however, that, like all other organs, the stomach suffers for want of regular work. In fasting, the glands no longer secrete; the blood quits the stomach; the regular activity is interrupted; and when food again calls upon the

stomach to do its old work, there is not the old vigour at command. Gradually the stimulus of food recalls the vigour of the secreting glands, and then appetite may be safely indulged.

---

* *History of the Earth*, ii. 126.

The next case is peculiarly valuable, as being the daily record of a man who voluntarily starved himself. He was a merchant, whose losses so preyed upon his mind that he resolved on suicide; and after roaming about the country from the 12th to the 15th of September 1818, he dug himself a grave in the wood, and remained there till the 3d of October, when he was found, still living, by an innkeeper. Hufeland, who records the case, says that, after an abstinence of eighteen days, the man still breathed, but expired immediately after a little soup had been forced down his throat. On his person they found a diary, written in pencil, from which the following are extracts:—

"*Sept.* 16.—The generous philanthropist who may find my corpse is requested to bury it, and to repay himself for the trouble by my clothes, my purse, my pocket-book, and knife. I have not committed suicide, but I die of starvation because bad men have deprived me of my fortune, and I do not choose to be a burden on my friends. It is unnecessary to open my body, since I have said I die of starvation.

"*Sept.* 17.—What a night I have passed! It has rained; I am wet through. I have been so cold.

"*Sept.* 18.—The cold and rain forced me to get up and walk; my walk was very feeble. Thirst made me

he was often tempted to eat a part of the men who died, and which the rest of his crew actually lived upon. He said that, during the continuance of this paroxysm, he found his pains insupportable, and was desirous at one time of anticipating that death which he thought inevitable. But *his pains gradually ceased after the sixth day* (for they had water in the ship, which kept them alive so long), and then he was in a state rather of languor than desire; nor did he much wish for food except when he saw others eating. The latter part of the time, when his health was almost destroyed, a thousand strange images rose upon his mind, and every one of his senses began to bring him wrong information. When he was presented with food by the ship's company that took him up, he could not help looking at it with loathing instead of desire; and it was not till after four days that his stomach was brought to its natural tone, when the violence of his appetite returned with a sort of canine eagerness."*

It will doubtless seem very strange to the uninitiated that a man after prolonged fasting, when his system is in such need of food and his appetite so keen, should be nevertheless in no proper condition to eat that food, and can only arrive at the proper condition by degrees, by eating a little at a time. The fact is, however, that, like all other organs, the stomach suffers for want of regular work. In fasting, the glands no longer secrete; the blood quits the stomach; the regular activity is interrupted; and when food again calls upon the

stomach to do its old work, there is not the old vigour at command. Gradually the stimulus of food recalls the vigour of the secreting glands, and then appetite may be safely indulged.

---

* *History of the Earth*, ii. 126.

The next case is peculiarly valuable, as being the daily record of a man who voluntarily starved himself. He was a merchant, whose losses so preyed upon his mind that he resolved on suicide; and after roaming about the country from the 12th to the 15th of September 1818, he dug himself a grave in the wood, and remained there till the 3d of October, when he was found, still living, by an innkeeper. Hufeland, who records the case, says that, after an abstinence of eighteen days, the man still breathed, but expired immediately after a little soup had been forced down his throat. On his person they found a diary, written in pencil, from which the following are extracts:—

"*Sept.* 16.—The generous philanthropist who may find my corpse is requested to bury it, and to repay himself for the trouble by my clothes, my purse, my pocket-book, and knife. I have not committed suicide, but I die of starvation because bad men have deprived me of my fortune, and I do not choose to be a burden on my friends. It is unnecessary to open my body, since I have said I die of starvation.

"*Sept.* 17.—What a night I have passed! It has rained; I am wet through. I have been so cold.

"*Sept.* 18.—The cold and rain forced me to get up and walk; my walk was very feeble. Thirst made me

he was often tempted to eat a part of the men who died, and which the rest of his crew actually lived upon. He said that, during the continuance of this paroxysm, he found his pains insupportable, and was desirous at one time of anticipating that death which he thought inevitable. But *his pains gradually ceased after the sixth day* (for they had water in the ship, which kept them alive so long), and then he was in a state rather of languor than desire; nor did he much wish for food except when he saw others eating. The latter part of the time, when his health was almost destroyed, a thousand strange images rose upon his mind, and every one of his senses began to bring him wrong information. When he was presented with food by the ship's company that took him up, he could not help looking at it with loathing instead of desire; and it was not till after four days that his stomach was brought to its natural tone, when the violence of his appetite returned with a sort of canine eagerness."*

It will doubtless seem very strange to the uninitiated that a man after prolonged fasting, when his system is in such need of food and his appetite so keen, should be nevertheless in no proper condition to eat that food, and can only arrive at the proper condition by degrees, by eating a little at a time. The fact is, however, that, like all other organs, the stomach suffers for want of regular work. In fasting, the glands no longer secrete; the blood quits the stomach; the regular activity is interrupted; and when food again calls upon the

stomach to do its old work, there is not the old vigour at command. Gradually the stimulus of food recalls the vigour of the secreting glands, and then appetite may be safely indulged.

---

* *History of the Earth*, ii. 126.

The next case is peculiarly valuable, as being the daily record of a man who voluntarily starved himself. He was a merchant, whose losses so preyed upon his mind that he resolved on suicide; and after roaming about the country from the 12th to the 15th of September 1818, he dug himself a grave in the wood, and remained there till the 3d of October, when he was found, still living, by an innkeeper. Hufeland, who records the case, says that, after an abstinence of eighteen days, the man still breathed, but expired immediately after a little soup had been forced down his throat. On his person they found a diary, written in pencil, from which the following are extracts:—

"*Sept.* 16.—The generous philanthropist who may find my corpse is requested to bury it, and to repay himself for the trouble by my clothes, my purse, my pocket-book, and knife. I have not committed suicide, but I die of starvation because bad men have deprived me of my fortune, and I do not choose to be a burden on my friends. It is unnecessary to open my body, since I have said I die of starvation.

"*Sept.* 17.—What a night I have passed! It has rained; I am wet through. I have been so cold.

"*Sept.* 18.—The cold and rain forced me to get up and walk; my walk was very feeble. Thirst made me

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushroo How nasty that water was !

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

“ *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights slightness of my clothing, which makes me fe cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

“ *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrib motion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, becom and more frightful. For three days there has rain. Would that I could lick up the water mushrooms now !

“ *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures I crawled with great labour to an inn, wher a bottle of beer, which did not quench my the evening I drank some water from the the inn where I bought the beer.

“ *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely less write. To-day thirst made me go t the water was icy cold, and made me sick vulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I re pump.

“ *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. Fo have been unable to go to the pump. T My weakness is such that I could scar lines to-day.

“ *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to rained. My clothes are not dry. N lieve how much I suffer. During the fell into my mouth, which did not q Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten y bowed to him. He returned my salu

I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent
tore. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."
ic case illustrates, as indeed all other
uth that Thirst is far more terrible than
an's resolution was not strong enough to
for drink, yet he never seems to have
ermination to refrain from food. It
iced that he ceases to complain of
sets in fiercely, because then fever

OF HUNGER.—The sensation
ather agreeable, but it quickly
olonged. The sense of keen
that "sinking in the stom-
ly passes from an uneasy
The pain *soon becomes*
ithheld, *we feel as if the*
incers. *This is followed*
ion, *feverishness, head-*
aming into *madness.*
by one *desire, before*
f *maternity has been*
have actually dis-
flesh of their dead

enes, and turn
ere shut up
rs.* The

ne, 1857.

d
en
led
ions
nach,
hours
juice is
tained in
listension,
Appetite ;

colour to this
mulated in the
unrelieved, soon
us as the explan-
to reject it.
might be urged, I

s in the lining membrane of
d figured in the chapter on

lick up the water which still rested on the m
How nasty that water was !

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the n
slightness of my clothing, which makes m
cold more keenly, have given me great suffer

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is ter
motion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, bec
and more frightful. For three days there h
rain. Would that I could lick up the water
mushrooms now !

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the torture
I crawled with great labour to an inn, where
a bottle of beer, which did not quench my t
the evening I drank some water from the p
the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely m
less write. To-day thirst made me go to t
the water was icy cold, and made me sick.
vulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I retur
pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For th
have been unable to go to the pump. Thirs
My weakness is such that I could scarcely t
lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to mov
rained. My clothes are not dry. No one
lieve how much I suffer. During the rain s
fell into my mouth, which did not quench
Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards f
bowed to him. He returned my salutation.

; I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent
more. I feel this is the last time . . . . .”
hetic case illustrates, as indeed all other
e truth that Thirst is far more terrible than
he man's resolution was not strong enough to
lesire for drink, yet he never seems to have
his determination to refrain from food. It
her noticed that he ceases to complain of
hen thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever
pervened.

SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation
is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly
pleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen
lightful, but that “sinking in the stom-
ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy
o positive pain. The pain *soon becomes*
f food be still withheld, we *feel as if* the
being torn by pincers. This is followed
general exhaustion, feverishness, head-
edness, often flaming into madness.
g seems possessed by one desire, before
energetic instinct of maternity has been
way, and mothers have actually dis-
companions for the flesh of their dead

our eyes from such scenes, and turn
the eight colliers, who were shut up
undred and *thirty*-six hours.* The

---

by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

s
is
in
on,
ite ;

this
in the
l, soon
explan-

urged, I

membrane of
he chapter on

lick up the water which still rested on the mu How nasty that water was!

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the ni slightness of my clothing, which makes me cold more keenly, have given me great sufferi

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terr motion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, becc and more frightful. For three days there ha rain. Would that I could lick up the water mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures I crawled with great labour to an inn, where a bottle of beer, which did not quench my tl the evening I drank some water from the pu the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely mo less write. To-day thirst made me go to tl the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I vulsions until evening; nevertheless, I retur pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For thr have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst My weakness is such that I could scarcely tı lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to mov rained. My clothes are not dry. No one lieve how much I suffer. During the rain sc fell into my mouth, which did not quench Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards fr bowed to him. He returned my salutation.

[illegible] I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent more. I feel this is the last time [illegible]

[illegible]

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump ; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

condly, it may be empty for days together—in illness—without the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

Another notion is that the gastric juice accumulates in the stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause would certainly be ample for the effect, and I know but of one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the fact on which the explanation rests is unfortunately a fiction ; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the empty stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus of food.

A more ingenious explanation has been propounded by Dr Beaumont, whose name is always cited when Digestion is under discussion, because he was enabled to enrich science with many valuable observations made on a patient who had a hole in his stomach, produced by a gunshot wound. "During the hours of fasting," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is slowly being secreted in the follicles * and retained in their tubes, thereby distending them : this distension, when moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite ; when more powerful, of Hunger."

There are several analogies which give colour to this explanation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the breast, and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon passes into that of pain. But ingenious as the explanation is, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.

Out of many arguments which might be urged, I

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

---

* The *follicles* are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of the stomach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on DIGESTION and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump ; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute ; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

on the water which still rests on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

Sept. 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the [illegible] of my clothing, which make me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

Sept. 20.—In my stomach there is a terrible commotion. Hunger and above all thirst become more and more agonizing. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lap up the water from the mushrooms now!

Sept. 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labor to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

Sept. 22.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was very cold and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless I returned to the pump.

Sept. 23.—My eyes seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines [illegible]

Sept. 24.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My limbs are very stiff. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. [illegible] from me. I [illegible] situation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

eat regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent y writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other ses do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than unger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to sist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have ltered in his determination to refrain from food. It ill be further noticed that he ceases to complain of e cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever ad also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation f Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly ecomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen ppetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stom- ch" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy nsation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes ute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the mach were being torn by pincers. This is followed a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, head- , light-headedness, often flaming into madness. whole being seems possessed by one desire, before even the energetic instinct of maternity has been to give way, and mothers have actually dis- with their companions for the flesh of their dead n.

let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn that of the eight colliers, who were shut up for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

---

se is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

at regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent r writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other es do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than nger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to ist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have tered in his determination to refrain from food. It ll be further noticed that he ceases to complain of e cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever d also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly comes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen ppetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomch" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy ensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes cute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the tomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed y a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headche, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. he whole being seems possessed by one desire, before hich even the energetic instinct of maternity has been nown to give way, and mothers have actually disuted with their companions for the flesh of their dead ildren.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn em on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

---

This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

lick up the water which still rested on the mus
How nasty that water was !

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nig
slightness of my clothing, which makes me
cold more keenly, have given me great suffering

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrib
motion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, becom
and more frightful. For three days there has
rain. Would that I could lick up the water fr
mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures o
I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I
a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thir
the evening I drank some water from the pum
the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely mov
less write. To-day thirst made me go to the
the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I
vulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I return
pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For thr
have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst
My weakness is such that I could scarcely
lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to mo
rained. My clothes are not dry. No on
lieve how much I suffer. During the rain
fell into my mouth, which did not quen
Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards
bowed to him. He returned my salutatio

eat regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent
y writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . .”
This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other
es do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than
ger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to
t the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have
ed in his determination to refrain from food. It
e further noticed that he ceases to complain of
ld when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever
o supervened.

THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation
er is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly
unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen
is delightful, but that “sinking in the stom-
ch ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy
nto positive pain. The pain soon becomes
l if food be still withheld, we feel as if the
re being torn by pincers. This is followed
of general exhaustion, feverishness, head-
headedness, often flaming into madness.
ing seems possessed by one desire, before
e energetic instinct of maternity has been
e way, and mothers have actually dis-
ir companions for the flesh of their dead

rt our eyes from such scenes, and turn
the eight colliers who were shut up
undred and thirty-six hours.* The

---

by LONGET in his Traité de Physiologie, 1857.

;

his
. the
soon
xplan-

urged, I

membrane of
ie chapter on

lick up the water which still rested on the mus
How nasty that water was !

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nig
slightness of my clothing, which makes me
cold more keenly, have given me great sufferin

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrib
motion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, becom
and more frightful. For three days there has
rain. Would that I could lick up the water fr
mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures o
I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I
a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thi
the evening I drank some water from the pum
the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely mov
less write. To-day thirst made me go to th
the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I
vulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I retur
pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For th
have been unable to go to the pump. Thir
My weakness is such that I could scarcely
lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to m
rained. My clothes are not dry. No o
lieve how much I suffer. During the ra
fell into my mouth, which did not que
Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yar
bowed to him. He returned my salutati

egret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent
ting more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."
pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other
o, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than
. The man's resolution was not strong enough to
he desire for drink, yet he never seems to have
in his determination to refrain from food. It
further noticed that he ceases to complain of
when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever
supervened.

SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation
is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly
npleasant if prolonged. The sense of *keen*
delightful, but that "sinking *in the stom-*
ensues, quickly passes *from an uneasy*
to positive pain. The *pain soon becomes*
if food be still withheld, we *feel as if the*
being torn by pincers. This is *followed*
general exhaustion, feverishness, head-
adedness, often flaming into madness.
ing seems possessed by [illegible] before
energetic instinct of [illegible] has been
way, and mothers [illegible] dis-
companions for [illegible]

[illegible]

our eyes from [illegible]
e eight [illegible] The
ndred and [illegible]
LONG[illegible]

,
; ;
this
n the
, soon
explan-
t.
urged, I
ng membrane of
the chapter on

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

lick up the water which still rested on t
How nasty that water was !

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of t
slightness of my clothing, which make
cold more keenly, have given me great s

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is
motion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst,
and more frightful. For three days the
rain. Would that I could lick up the w
mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tor
I crawled with great labour to an inn, w
a bottle of beer, which did not quench
the evening I drank some water from t
the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarc
less write. To-day thirst made me g
the water was icy cold, and made me s
vulsions until evening ; nevertheless,
pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead.
have been unable to go to the pump.
My weakness is such that I could sc
lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable
rained. My clothes are not dry.
lieve how much I suffer. During t
fell into my mouth, which did not
Yesterday I saw a peasant about te
bowed to him. He returned my sal

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traitê de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was!

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

" *Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

" *Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now!

" *Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

" *Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

" *Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

" *Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

lick up the water which still rested on the mushrooms. How nasty that water was !

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

"*Sept.* 19.—The cold, the length of the nights, the slightness of my clothing, which makes me feel the cold more keenly, have given me great suffering.

"*Sept.* 20.—In my stomach there is terrible commotion ; hunger, and, above all, thirst, become more and more frightful. For three days there has been no rain. Would that I could lick up the water from the mushrooms now !

"*Sept.* 21.—Unable to endure the tortures of thirst, I crawled with great labour to an inn, where I bought a bottle of beer, which did not quench my thirst. In the evening I drank some water from the pump, near the inn where I bought the beer.

"*Sept.* 23.—Yesterday I could scarcely move, much less write. To-day thirst made me go to the pump ; the water was icy cold, and made me sick. I had convulsions until evening ; nevertheless, I returned to the pump.

"*Sept.* 26.—My legs seem dead. For three days I have been unable to go to the pump. Thirst increases. My weakness is such that I could scarcely trace these lines to-day.

"*Sept.* 29.—I have been unable to move. It has rained. My clothes are not dry. No one would believe how much I suffer. During the rain some drops fell into my mouth, which did not quench my thirst. Yesterday I saw a peasant about ten yards from me. I bowed to him. He returned my salutation. It is with

great regret I die. Weakness and convulsions prevent my writing more. I feel this is the last time . . . . ."

This pathetic case illustrates, as indeed all other cases do, the truth that Thirst is far more terrible than Hunger. The man's resolution was not strong enough to resist the desire for drink, yet he never seems to have faltered in his determination to refrain from food. It will be further noticed that he ceases to complain of the cold when thirst sets in fiercely, because then fever had also supervened.

VI. THE SENSATION OF HUNGER.—The sensation of Hunger is at first rather agreeable, but it quickly becomes unpleasant if prolonged. The sense of keen appetite is delightful, but that "sinking in the stomach" which ensues, quickly passes from an uneasy sensation into positive pain. The pain soon becomes acute; and if food be still withheld, we feel as if the stomach were being torn by pincers. This is followed by a state of general exhaustion, feverishness, headache, light-headedness, often flaming into madness. The whole being seems possessed by one desire, before which even the energetic instinct of maternity has been known to give way, and mothers have actually disputed with their companions for the flesh of their dead children.

But let us avert our eyes from such scenes, and turn them on that of the eight colliers, who were shut up in a pit for one hundred and thirty-six hours.* The

first day they shared between them half a pound of bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, which one of them had brought into the mine, and refused to keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others, and would not share the small supply of food. It is very remarkable that these men, who for five days had no nourishment whatever, declared, when they were rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances, we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

---

* This case is quoted by LONGET in his *Traité de Physiologie*, 1857.

What causes the sensation of Hunger ?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed to repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause ; but it has also been seen that this primary cause may exist without the existence of that sensation known to us as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have no ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and other simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel the *sensation* of Hunger ; we must therefore seek for some more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from emptiness of the stomach, which emptiness, according to some physiologists, allows the walls of the stomach to rub against each other, and then the friction causes the sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hypothesis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the stomach is always empty some time before Hunger is felt ; se-

condly, it may be empty for days together—in illness—without the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.

Another notion is that the gastric juice accumulates in the stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause would certainly be ample for the effect, and I know but of one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the fact on which the explanation rests is unfortunately a fiction; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the empty stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus of food.

A more ingenious explanation has been propounded by Dr Beaumont, whose name is always cited when Digestion is under discussion, because he was enabled to enrich science with many valuable observations made on a patient who had a hole in his stomach, produced by a gunshot wound. "During the hours of fasting," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is slowly being secreted in the follicles * and retained in their tubes, thereby distending them: this distension, when moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite; when more powerful, of Hunger."

There are several analogies which give colour to this explanation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the breast, and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon passes into that of pain. But ingenious as the explanation is, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.

Out of many arguments which might be urged, I

---

* The *follicles* are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of the stomach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on DIGESTION and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

first day they shared between them half a pou
bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, w
one of them had brought into the mine, and refus
keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eate
fore descending into the mine, and they generousl
clared that they should not die sooner than the ot
and would not share the small supply of food.
very remarkable that these men, who for five days
no nourishment whatever, declared, when they
rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly in
venienced them. If we knew more of the circumsta
we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fa

What causes the sensation of Hunger ?

It has been seen that the absence of food neede
repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause ; b
has also been seen that this primary cause may
without the existence of that sensation known t
as Hunger. All animals need food, but we hav
ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and
simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel
sensation of Hunger ; we must therefore seek for
more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from
tiness of the stomach, which emptiness, accordin
some physiologists, allows the walls of the stoma
rub against each other, and then the friction cause
sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hyp
sis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the sto
is always empty some time before Hunger is felt

it may be empty for days together—in illness—
the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.
her notion is that the gastric juice accumulates
tomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause
ertainly be ample for the effect, and I know
ne objection to our accepting it, namely, that the
which the explanation rests is unfortunately a
the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the
tomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus

re ingenious explanation has been propounded
Beaumont, whose name is always cited when
n is under discussion, because he was enabled
h science with many valuable observations
n a patient who had a hole in his stomach,
d by a gunshot wound. "During the hours
g," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is
eing secreted in the follicles * and retained in
bes, thereby distending them: this distension,
oderate, produces the sensation of Appetite;
ore powerful, of Hunger."
are several analogies which give colour to this
ion. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the
and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon
nto that of pain. But ingenious as the explan-
a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.
f many arguments which might be urged, I

---

llicles are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of
h. They will be described and figured in the chapter on
and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

first day they shared between them half a pound c bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, whic one of them had brought into the mine, and refused t keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others and would not share the small supply of food. It i very remarkable that these men, who for five days ha no nourishment whatever, declared, when they we rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inco venienced them. If we knew more of the circumstanc we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact

What causes the sensation of Hunger?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause; bu has also been seen that this primary cause may e without the existence of that sensation known t as Hunger. All animals need food, but we hav ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, fe *sensation* of Hunger; we must therefore seek for more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from tiness of the stomach, which emptiness, accord some physiologists, allows the walls of the stom rub against each other, and then the friction cau sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hy sis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the s is always empty some time before Hunger is f

ly, it may be empty for days together—in illness—
ut the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.
nother notion is that the gastric juice accumulates
e stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause
d certainly be ample for the effect, and I know
f one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the
n which the explanation rests is unfortunately a
n ; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the
y stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus
d.

more ingenious explanation has been propounded
r Beaumont, whose name is always cited when
tion is under discussion, because he was enabled
ich science with many valuable observations
on a patient who had a hole in his stomach,
ed by a gunshot wound. "During the hours
ing," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is
being secreted in the follicles * and retained in
bes, thereby distending them : this distension,
oderate, produces the sensation of Appetite ;
re powerful, of Hunger."

re several analogies which give colour to this
n. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the
d the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon
that of *pain.* But ingenious as the explan-
loser scrutiny causes us to reject it.
any arguments which might be urged, I

---

* are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of
hey will be described and figured in the chapter on
DIGESTION, fig. 5.

first day they shared between them half a pound of bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, which one of them had brought into the mine, and refused to keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others, and would not share the small supply of food. It is very remarkable that these men, who for five days had no nourishment whatever, declared, when they were rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances, we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

What causes the sensation of Hunger ?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed to repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause ; but it has also been seen that this primary cause may exist without the existence of that sensation known to us as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have no ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and other simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel the *sensation* of Hunger ; we must therefore seek for some more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from emptiness of the stomach, which emptiness, according to some physiologists, allows the walls of the stomach to rub against each other, and then the friction causes the sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hypothesis, but two facts will suffice here : first, the stomach is always empty some time before Hunger is felt ; se-

condly, it may be empty for days together—in illness—without the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.

Another notion is that the gastric juice accumulates in the stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause would certainly be ample for the effect, and I know but of one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the fact on which the explanation rests is unfortunately a fiction; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the empty stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus of food.

A more ingenious explanation has been propounded by Dr Beaumont, whose name is always cited when Digestion is under discussion, because he was enabled to enrich science with many valuable observations made on a patient who had a hole in his stomach, produced by a gunshot wound. "During the hours of fasting," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is slowly being secreted in the follicles * and retained in their tubes, thereby distending them: this distension, when moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite; when more powerful, of Hunger."

There are several analogies which give colour to this explanation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the breast, and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon passes into that of pain. But ingenious as the explanation is, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.

Out of many arguments which might be urged, I

first day they shared between them half a pound of bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, which one of them had brought into the mine, and refused to keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others, and would not share the small supply of food. It is very remarkable that these men, who for five days had no nourishment whatever, declared, when they were rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

---

* The *follicles* are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of the stomach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on DIGESTION and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

What causes the sensation of Hunger?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause; but has also been seen that this primary cause may ex without the existence of that sensation known to as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and ot simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel *sensation* of Hunger; we must therefore seek for s more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from tiness of the stomach, which emptiness, accordi some physiologists, allows the walls of the stom rub against each other, and then the friction caus sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hy sis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the st is always empty some time before Hunger is fel

y, it may be empty for days together—in illness—
ut the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.

other notion is that the gastric juice accumulates
stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause
l certainly be ample for the effect, and I know
one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the
n which the explanation rests is unfortunately a
; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the
stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus
d.

nore ingenious explanation has been propounded
Beaumont, whose name is always cited when
ion is under discussion, because he was enabled
ich science with many valuable observations
on a patient who had a hole in his stomach,
ed by a gunshot wound. "During the hours
ing," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is
eing secreted in the follicles * and retained in
bes, thereby distending them: this distension,
derate, produces the sensation of Appetite;
re powerful, of Hunger."

re several analogies which give colour to this
n. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the
the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon
that of pain. But ingenious as the explan-
loser scrutiny causes us to reject it.

ny arguments which might be urged, I

---

are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of
ey will be described and figured in the chapter on
DIGESTION, fig. 5.

first day they shared between them half a pound bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, whic one of them had brought into the mine, and refused t keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten be fore descending into the mine, and they generously de clared that they should not die sooner than the other and would not share the small supply of food. It i very remarkable that these men, who for five days ha no nourishment whatever, declared, when they wer rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

What causes the sensation of Hunger ?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed t repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause; but i has also been seen that this primary cause may exist without the existence of that sensation known to us as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have no ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and other simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel th *sensation* of Hunger; we must therefore seek for som more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from emptiness of the stomach, which emptiness, according t some physiologists, allows the walls of the stomach t rub against each other, and then the friction causes th sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hypothe sis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the stomac is always empty some time before Hunger is felt; se

, it may be empty for days together—in illness—
it the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.
other notion is that the gastric juice accumulates
stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause
certainly be ample for the effect, and I know
one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the
which the explanation rests is unfortunately a
; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the
stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus
1.

nore ingenious explanation has been propounded
Beaumont, whose name is always cited when
ion is under discussion, because he was enabled
ich science with many valuable observations
on a patient who had a hole in his stomach,
ced by a gunshot wound. "During the hours
ting," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is
being secreted in the follicles * and retained in
tubes, thereby distending them: this distension,
moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite;
more powerful, of Hunger."

re are several analogies which give colour to this
ation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the
and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon
into that of pain. But ingenious as the explan-
s, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.

of many arguments which might be urged, I

---

follicles are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of
ach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on
on and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

first day they shared between them half a pound bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, whic one of them had brought into the mine, and refused t keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others and would not share the small supply of food. It i very remarkable that these men, who for five days had no nourishment whatever, declared, when they were rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances, we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

What causes the sensation of Hunger?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed to repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause; but it has also been seen that this primary cause may exist without the existence of that sensation known to us as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have no ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and other simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel the *sensation* of Hunger; we must therefore seek for some more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from emptiness of the stomach, which emptiness, according to some physiologists, allows the walls of the stomach to rub against each other, and then the friction causes the sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hypothesis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the stomach is always empty some time before Hunger is felt; se

, it may be empty for days together—in illness—
t the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.
other notion is that the gastric juice accumulates
stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause
certainly be ample for the effect, and I know
one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the
which the explanation rests is unfortunately a
; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the
stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus
l.

ore ingenious explanation has been propounded
Beaumont, whose name is always cited when
ion is under discussion, because he was enabled
ich science with many valuable observations
on a patient who had a hole in his stomach,
ed by a gunshot wound. "During the hours
ing," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is
being secreted in the follicles * and retained in
tubes, thereby distending them : this distension,
moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite ;
more powerful, of Hunger."

re are several analogies which give colour to this
ation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the
and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon
into that of pain. But ingenious as the explan-
s, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.
of many arguments which might be urged, I

---

follicles are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of
ach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on
ON and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

remember that food in the stomach is as much *outside* the organism as if it were in the hand. The digestive canal is nothing but a folding-in of the general envelope, like the inverted finger of a glove; and until the absorbent vessels carry the food from the stomach *into* the circulating system, the food remains *outside*.

Here, then, are two noticeable facts: we may relieve the sensation of Hunger without directly acting on the stomach, the mere supply of food to the blood sufficing; and we may relieve the sensation simply by acting on the stomach, the want of food being as great as before. Do not these facts indicate that Hunger must be related to the *general* state of the system, and to the *particular* state of the stomach? If we once regard the subject in this light, we shall be easily led to perceive that although the general state of the system, under deficiency of food, is the *primary cause* of Hunger, it is only so in as far as it produces a certain *condition of the stomach;* and this condition of the stomach is the *proximate cause* of the sensation.

I think this mode of viewing it will extricate us from the difficulties which have been brought forward in the many discussions as to whether the stomach, or one part of the nervous system, is the *seat* of Hunger. The stomach is the seat of the sensation, just as the eyes are the seat of the sensation of sleepiness: the general state of exhaustion causes the eyes to droop heavily, and the general state of the system causes the stomach to produce the sensation of hunger; and as in sleepiness we may relieve the sensation by bathing the

first day they shared between them half a pound of bread, a morsel of cheese, and two mugs of wine, which one of them had brought into the mine, and refused to keep for himself alone. Two of the men had eaten before descending into the mine, and they generously declared that they should not die sooner than the others, and would not share the small supply of food. It is very remarkable that these men, who for five days had no nourishment whatever, declared, when they were rescued, that their abstinence had not greatly inconvenienced them. If we knew more of the circumstances, we might perhaps explain this now inexplicable fact.

What causes the sensation of Hunger?

It has been seen that the absence of food needed to repair the waste of tissue is the primary cause; but it has also been seen that this primary cause may exist without the existence of that sensation known to us as Hunger. All animals need food, but we have no ground for supposing that polypes, jelly-fish, and other simpler animals destitute of a nervous system, feel the *sensation* of Hunger; we must therefore seek for some more proximate cause of this sensation.

The popular notion is that Hunger arises from emptiness of the stomach, which emptiness, according to some physiologists, allows the walls of the stomach to rub against each other, and then the friction causes the sensation.

It is easy to show the inaccuracy of this hypothesis, but two facts will suffice here: first, the stomach is always empty some time before Hunger is felt; se-

condly, it may be empty for days together—in illness—without the slightest sensation of Hunger being felt.

Another notion is that the gastric juice accumulates in the stomach, and attacks its walls. Such a cause would certainly be ample for the effect, and I know but of one objection to our accepting it, namely, that the fact on which the explanation rests is unfortunately a fiction; the gastric juice does *not* accumulate in the empty stomach, but is only secreted after the stimulus of food.

A more ingenious explanation has been propounded by Dr Beaumont, whose name is always cited when Digestion is under discussion, because he was enabled to enrich science with many valuable observations made on a patient who had a hole in his stomach, produced by a gunshot wound. "During the hours of fasting," says Dr Beaumont, "the gastric juice is slowly being secreted in the follicles * and retained in their tubes, thereby distending them: this distension, when moderate, produces the sensation of Appetite; when more powerful, of Hunger."

There are several analogies which give colour to this explanation. Thus, milk is slowly accumulated in the breast, and the sense of fulness, if unrelieved, soon passes into that of pain. But ingenious as the explanation is, a closer scrutiny causes us to reject it.

Out of many arguments which might be urged, I

will mention only two—one anatomical, and one physiological. If the gastric juice were accumulated in the tubes, there is no anatomical obstruction to its immediate passage into the stomach, and the distension would at once be obviated (see Fig. 5). Nor have we any good ground for supposing that an accumulation does take place; for Dr Beaumont's argument that it *must* take place, because it flows so abundantly on the introduction of food into the stomach, would equally prove that tears must be accumulated in advance, because they gush forth so copiously on the first stimulus of grief; or that saliva must be accumulated, because it flows so freely whenever a stimulus is presented.

---

* The *follicles* are small secreting glands in the lining membrane of the stomach. They will be described and figured in the chapter on DIGESTION and INDIGESTION, fig. 5.

While Dr Beaumont's explanation wants an anatomical basis, it is still more directly at variance with the physiological fact, that when food is injected into the veins or the intestines, the sensation of Hunger disappears, although the stomach is as empty as it was before, and the tubes as distended as they were before.

The fact last named would dispose us to believe that want of food was, after all, the proximate as well as the primary cause of Hunger, did we not know that tobacco, opium, and even inorganic substances, introduced into the stomach, will remove the sensation. In a succeeding chapter (see FOOD and DRINK) we shall learn that there are nations who eat clay to allay their hunger; and we all know how the first mouthful of food takes away the sharpness of the sensation, although two or three hours must elapse before the food will really have *entered* the body. For we must remember that food in the stomach is as much *outside* the organism as if it were in the hand. The digestive canal is nothing but a folding-in of the general envelope, like the inverted finger of a glove; and until the absorbent vessels carry the food from the stomach *into* the circulating system, the food remains *outside*.

Here, then, are two noticeable facts: we may relieve the sensation of Hunger without directly acting on the stomach, the mere supply of food to the blood sufficing; and we may relieve the sensation simply by acting on the stomach, the want of food being as great as before. Do not these facts indicate that Hunger must be related to the *general* state of the system, and to the *particular* state of the stomach? If we once regard the subject in this light, we shall be easily led to perceive that although the general state of the system, under deficiency of food, is the *primary cause* of Hunger, it is only so in as far as it produces a certain *condition of the stomach;* and this condition of the stomach is the *proximate cause* of the sensation.

I think this mode of viewing it will extricate us from the difficulties which have been brought forward in the many discussions as to whether the stomach, or one part of the nervous system, is the *seat* of Hunger. The stomach is the seat of the sensation, just as the eyes are the seat of the sensation of sleepiness: the general state of exhaustion causes the eyes to droop heavily, and the general state of the system causes the stomach to produce the sensation of hunger; and as in sleepiness we may relieve the sensation by bathing the eyes with cold water, yet this will not relieve the general exhaustion; so in hunger, we may relieve the sensation by opium, or even clay, but this will not relieve that general state of the system which produced the sensation.

It is evident that the general state of the system must be felt, and to it we owe those daily variations in comfort which we express in the terms "vigour," "gladness," "lassitude," "depression," &c.; nevertheless physiologists have not assigned a name to such sensations.

In a future chapter (FEELING and THINKING) I shall enter more fully into these, which I propose to call *Systemic* Sensations, because they arise in the system at large, or are not localised by consciousness in any one organ. But for the purpose of this chapter, current terms must be accepted; and although, therefore, strict accuracy would lead us to say that Hunger, as a Systemic Sensation, is caused by want of food to repair the waste of tissue, and, as a Local Sensation, is caused by a specific condition of the stomach; yet, following popular language, we must say that Hunger is a sensation having its seat in the stomach; and all the arguments or experiments which attempt to prove that its seat must be elsewhere, have reference to the general state of the system, but not to the specific sensation known to us as Hunger.

If we examine the stomach of a fasting animal, we shall find it pale, and in a condition of obvious *atony.* The blood has retreated from the smaller vessels, and circulates only in the larger channels. But no sooner is the organ stimulated by the introduction of food, or any irritant substance, than this pale surface becomes visibly congested, turgescent, and its secretions pour forth abundantly. With this rush of blood to the stomach the sensation of uneasiness is carried away. Hence we may conclude that Hunger is in some way dependent on the state of the circulation in the stomach.

VII. THIRST closely resembles Hunger in being a general or Systemic sensation, although it is usually considered only as a local sensation, arising from the dryness of the mouth and throat. This dryness of the throat and mouth, so familiar to us all, is produced by a deficiency of liquid in the body; but it may be, and often is, produced when there is no deficiency in the general system, nothing but a local disturbance, this disturbance producing a local sensation. Wines, coffee, and spices create a strong feeling of thirst, yet the two first increase the quantity of liquid instead of diminishing it. And we know how ineffectual liquid in any quantity is to quench the feeling of Thirst under some conditions, especially after long suffering.

Andersson, in his travels in Africa, describes the sufferings of his men and cattle, adding, "even when the thirsty men and animals were let loose in the water, although they drank to repletion, the water seemed to have lost its property, for our best endeavours to slake our thirst proved unavailing."* The long continuance of Thirst had produced a certain feverish condition which could not be immediately relieved when the system received its necessary supply of liquid; this shows that although deficiency of liquid is the *primary* cause of Thirst, the *proximate* cause must be some local affection which has been induced.

---

* ANDERSSON: *Lake Ngami*, p. 38.

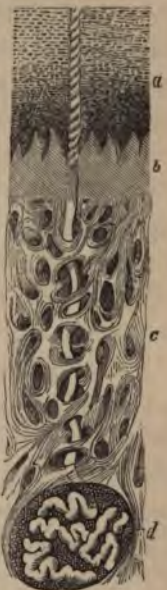
On the other hand, this local sensation is so dependent on the system, that if water be injected into the veins or the intestines, Thirst disappears, although the mouth and throat have not been touched. A humid atmosphere prevents Thirst; a bath relieves it, because the water is absorbed through the skin.

On this principle, Franklin grounds his advice to men who are exposed to scarcity of drink: they should bathe themselves in tubs of salt water, he says. This would undoubtedly relieve their thirst, but it is a plan which would be excessively dangerous in shipwrecks, unless food were abundant, since the abstraction of so much heat as would follow a bath, would in all probability be fatal.

VIII. Cause of Thirst.—As deficiency of food to supply the waste of tissue is the primary cause of Hunger, so deficiency of water to supply the waste which goes on incessantly in the excretions, respiration, and perspiration, is the primary cause of Thirst.

Every time we breathe we throw from our lungs a quantity of water in the form of vapour. We are made sensible of this when the breath condenses on the colder surface of glass or steel, and when, as in winter, the atmosphere is sufficiently cold to condense the vapour on its issuing from our mouths.

Fig. 2.



SWEAT-GLAND.

a is the cuticle or scarfskin (epidermis), the deeper layers, dark in colour, being the *rete mucosum*; *b* are the papillæ; *c* the cutis or true skin (derma); *d* the sweat-gland, in a cavity of oily globules.

This is only one source of the waste of water: a more important source is that of perspiration, which in hot weather, or during violent exercise, causes the water to roll down our skins with obtrusive copiousness. But even when we are perfectly quiescent, the loss of water, although not obvious, is considerable.

To render this intelligible, let attention be fixed on the following diagram, which represents one of the glands that secrete this perspiration. It represents the vertical section of the sole of the foot (after Todd and Bowman).

The gland at *d* is seen to possess a twisted duct, which passes upwards to the surface. From this tube comes the perspiration, sensible and insensible.

It is calculated that there are no less than twenty-eight miles of this tubing on the surface of the human body, from which the water will escape as *insensible perspiration;* and although the amount of water which is thus evaporated from the surface must necessarily vary with the clothing, the activity, and even the peculiar constitution of the individual, an average estimate has been attained which shows that from *two to three pounds of water* are daily evaporated from the skin. From the lungs it is ascertained that every minute we throw off from four to seven grains of water, from the skin eleven grains. To these must be added the quantity abstracted by the kidneys, a variable but important element in the sum.

It may not at first be clear to the reader why an abstraction of water daily should profoundly affect the organism unless an equivalent be restored. What can it matter that the body should lose a little water as vapour? Is water an essential part of the body? Is it indispensable to life?

Not only is water an essential part of the body, it might be called the *most* essential, if pre-eminence could be given where all are indispensable. In quantity, water has an enormous preponderance over all other constituents: it forms 70 per cent of the whole weight! There is not a single tissue in the body—not even that of bone, not even the enamel of the teeth—into the composition of which water does not enter as a necessary ingredient. In some of the tissues, and those the most active, it forms the chief ingredient. In the nervous tissue 800 parts out of every 1000 are of water; in the lungs 830; in the pancreas 871; in the retina no less then 927.

Commensurate with this anatomical preponderance, is the physiological importance of water. It is the carrier of the food, the vehicle of waste. It holds gases in solution, dissolves solids, helps to give every tissue its physical character, and is the indispensable condition of that ceaseless change of Composition and Decomposition on which the continuance of life depends.

From the elaborate experiments of Bidder and Schmidt, it is clear that the changes which go on in the organism are far more concerned with its water than with its solids. In the digestive fluids, for example, one-fifth to one-fourth of the water contained in the body will be found passing and repassing; whereas only one-sixtieth or one-seventieth of the solids of the body pass into them.[*]

Such being the part played by water in the organism, we can understand how the oscillations of so important a fluid must necessarily bring with it oscillations in our feelings of comfort and discomfort, and how any unusual abstraction of it must produce that disturbance of the general system which is known under the name of Raging Thirst—a disturbance far more terrible than that of Starvation, and for this reason: During abstinence from food, the organism can still live upon its own substance, which furnishes all the necessary material; but during abstinence from liquid, the organism has no such source of supply within itself.

Men have been known to endure absolute privation of food for some weeks, but three days of absolute privation of drink (unless in a moist atmosphere) is perhaps the limit of endurance. Thirst is the most atrocious torture ever invented by Oriental tyrants. It is that which most effectually tames animals. Mr Astley, when he had a refractory horse, always used thirst as the most effective power of coercion, giving a little water as the reward for every act of obedience. The histories of shipwreck paint fearful pictures of the sufferings endured from thirst; and one of the most appalling cases known is the celebrated imprisonment of one hundred and forty-six men in the Black Hole at Calcutta—a case frequently alluded to, but which must be cited here at some length on account of its physiological bearing :—

---

[*] Bidder u. Schmidt: *Die Verdauungssäfte*, p. 287.

The Governor of Fort-William at Calcutta having imprisoned a merchant—the well-known Omychund,—the infamous Nabob of Bengal, Surajah Dowlah, on the look-out for a pretext, marched against Fort-William with a considerable force, besieged and took it, and imprisoned the surviving part of the garrison in the barrack-room named the Black Hole. The letter in which Mr Holwell, the officer in command, describes the horrors of this imprisonment is printed in the *Annual Register* for 1758, and from it the following extracts are made :—

" Figure to youself the situation of a hundred and forty-six wretches, exhausted by continual fatigue and action, crammed together in a cube of eighteen feet, in a close sultry night in Bengal, shut up to the eastward and southward (the only quarter whence air could reach us) by dead walls, and by a wall and door to the north, open only to the westward by two windows strongly barred with iron, from which we could receive scarce any the least circulation of fresh air. . . . We had been but a few minutes confined before every one fell into a perspiration so profuse, you can form no idea of it. This brought on a raging thirst, which increased in proportion as the body was drained of its moisture. Various expedients were thought of to give more room and air. To gain the former it was moved to put off their clothes; this was approved as a happy motion, and in a few moments every one was stripped—myself, Mr Court, and the two young gentlemen by me, excepted. For a little while they flattered themselves with having gained a mighty advantage; every hat was put in motion to gain a circulation of air, and Mr Baillie proposed that every man should sit down on his hams. This expedient was several times put in practice, and at each time many of the poor creatures, whose natural strength was less than that of others, or who had been more exhausted, and could not immediately recover their legs when the word was given to rise—fell to rise no more, for they were instantly trod to death or suffocated. When the whole body sat down, they were so closely wedged together that they were obliged to use many efforts before they could get up again. Before nine o'clock every man's thirst grew intolerable, and respiration difficult. Efforts were made to force the door, but in vain. Many insults were used to the guard to provoke them to fire on us. For my own part, I hitherto felt little pain or uneasiness, but what resulted from my anxiety for the sufferings of those within. By keeping my face close between two of the bars I obtained air enough to give my lungs easy play, though my perspiration was excessive, and thirst commencing. At this period so strong a urinous volatile effluvia came from the prison that I was not able to turn my head that way for more than a few seconds at a time.

"Now everybody, except those situated in and near the windows, began to grow outrageous, and many delirious. *Water! water!* became the general cry. An old Jemmantdaar, taking pity on us, ordered the people to bring us some skins of water. This was what I dreaded. I foresaw it would prove the ruin of the small chance left us, and essayed many times to speak to him privately to forbid it being brought; but the clamour was so loud it became impossible. The water appeared. Words cannot paint the universal agitation and raving the sight of it threw us into. I flattered myself that some, by preserving an equal temper of mind, might outlive the night; but now the reflection which gave me the greatest pain was, that I saw no possibility of one escaping to tell the dismal tale. *Until the water came I had not myself suffered much from thirst, which instantly grew excessive.* We had no means of conveying it into the prison but by hats forced through the bars; and thus myself, and Coles, and Scott supplied them as fast as possible. But those who have experienced intense thirst, or are acquainted with the cause and nature of this appetite, will be sufficiently sensible it could receive no more than a momentary alleviation : the cause still subsisted. Though we brought full hats through the bars, there ensued such violent struggles and frequent contests to get it, that before it reached the lips of any one, there would be scarcely a small tea-cupful left in them. These supplies, like sprinkling water on fire, only seemed to feed the flame. Oh! my dear sir, how shall I give you a just conception of what I felt at the cries and cravings of those in the remoter parts of the prison, who could not entertain a probable hope of obtaining a drop, yet could not divest themselves of expectation, however unavailing, calling on me by the tender considerations of affection and friendship. The confusion now became general and horrid. Several quitted the other window (the only chance they had for life) to force their way to the water, and the throng and press upon the window was beyond bearing; many, forcing their way from the further part of the room, pressed down those in their passage who had less strength, and trampled them to death.

"From about nine to eleven I sustained this cruel scene, still supplying them with water, though my legs were almost broke with the weight against them. By this time I myself was near pressed to death, and my two companions, with Mr Parker, who had forced himself to the window, were really so. At last I became so pressed and wedged up, I was deprived of all motion. Determined now to give everything up, I called to them, and begged them, as a last instance of their regard, that they would relieve the pressure upon me, and permit me to retire out of the window to die in quiet. They gave way, and with much difficulty I forced a passage into the centre of the prison, where the throng was less by the many dead, amounting to one-third, and the numbers who flocked to the windows; for by this time they had water also at the other window. . . . I laid myself down on some of the dead, and, recommending myself to Heaven, had the comfort of thinking my sufferings could have no long duration. My thirst now grew insupportable, and the difficulty of breathing much increased; and I had not remained in this situation ten minutes before I was seized with a pain in my breast, and palpitation of heart, both to the most exquisite degree. These obliged me to get up again, but still the pain, palpitation, and difficulty of breathing increased. I retained my senses notwithstanding, and had the grief to see death not so near me as I had hoped, but could no longer bear the pains I suffered without attempting a relief, which I knew fresh air would and could only give me. I instantly determined to push for the window opposite to me, and by an effort of double the strength I ever before possessed, gained the third rank at it—with one hand seized a bar, and by that means gained a second, though I think there were at least six or seven ranks between me and the window. *In a few moments the pain, palpitation, and difficulty of breathing ceased,* but the thirst continued intolerable. I called aloud '*Water for God's sake!*' I had been concluded dead; but as soon as the men found me amongst them, they still had the respect and tenderness for me to cry out, '*Give him water!*' nor would one of them at the window attempt to touch it till I had drunk. *But from the water I had no relief; my thirst was rather increased by it;* so I determined to drink no more, but patiently wait the event. I kept my mouth moist from time to time by sucking the perspiration out of my shirt-sleeves, and catching the drops as they fell like heavy rain from my head and face; you can hardly imagine how unhappy I was if any of them escaped my mouth. . . . . I was observed by one of my companions on the right in the expedient of allaying my thirst by sucking my shirt-sleeve. He took the hint, and robbed me from time to time of a considerable part of my store, though, after I detected him, I had the address to begin on that sleeve first when I thought my reservoirs were sufficiently replenished, and our mouths and noses often met in contact. This man was one of the few who escaped death, and he has since paid me the compliment of assuring me he believed he owed his life to the many comfortable draughts he had from my sleeves. No Bristol water could be more soft or pleasant than what arose from perspiration.

"By half-past eleven the much greater number of those living were in an outrageous delirium, and others quite ungovernable; few retaining any calmness but the ranks near the windows. They now all found that water, instead of relieving their uneasiness, rather heightened it, and Air! air! was the general cry. Every insult that could be devised against the guard was repeated to provoke them to fire on us, every man that could, rushing tumultuously towards the windows with eager hopes of meeting the first shot. But these failing, they whose strength and spirits were quite exhausted laid themselves down, and quietly expired upon their fellows; others who had yet some strength and vigour left, made a last effort for the windows, and several succeeded by leaping and scrambling over the backs and heads of those in the first ranks; and got hold of the bars, from which there was no removing them. Many to the right and left sunk with the violent pressure, and were soon suffocated; for now a steam arose from the living and the dead, which affected us in all its circumstances, as if we were forcibly held by our heads over a bowl of strong volatile spirit of hartshorn until suffocated; nor could the effluvia of the one be distinguished from the other. I need not ask your commiseration when I tell you that in this plight, from half an hour after eleven till two in the morning, I sustained the weight of a heavy man with his knees on my back, and the pressure of his whole body on my head; a Dutch sergeant who had taken his seat on my left shoulder, and a black soldier bearing on my right: all which nothing would have enabled me to support but the props and pressure equally sustaining me all round. The two latter I frequently dislodged by shifting my hold on the bars, and driving my knuckles into their ribs; but my friend above stuck fast, and, as he held by two bars, was immovable. The repeated trials I made to dislodge this insufferable encumbrance upon me, at last quite exhausted me, and towards two o'clock, finding I must quit the window or sink where I was, I resolved on the former, having borne truly, for the sake of others, infinitely more for life than the best of it is worth.

"I was at this time sensible of no pain and little uneasiness. I found a stupor coming on apace, and laid myself down by that gallant old man, the reverend Jervas Bellamy, who lay dead with his son, the lieutenant, hand in hand, near the southernmost wall of the prison. Of what passed in the interval, to the time of resurrection from this hole of horrors, I can give you no account."

At six in the morning the door was opened, when only three-and-twenty out of the hundred and forty-six still breathed. These were subsequently revived.

Although the principal cause of this mortality must be ascribed to the vitiated atmosphere rather than to Thirst, we nevertheless see some of the frightful phenomena of Thirst exemplified in this narrative. Death by asphyxia (from vitiated air) is generally peaceful, and not at all such as is described in the foregoing. Attention is moreover called to certain passages in italics. These show that the sensation of Thirst is not merely a sensation dependent on a deficiency of liquid in the system, but a local sensation dependent on a local disturbance: the more water these men drank, the more dreadful seemed their thirst; and the mere sight of water rendered the sensation, which before was endurable, quite intolerable. The *increase* of the sensation following a *supply* of water, would be wholly inexplicable to those who maintain that the proximate cause of Thirst is deficiency of liquid; but is not wholly inexplicable, if we regard the deficiency as the primary, not the proximate cause; for this primary cause having set up a feverish condition in the mouth and throat, that condition would continue after the original cause had ceased to exist. The stimulus of cold water is only a momentary relief in this case, and exaggerates the sensation by stimulating a greater flow of blood to the parts. If, instead of cold water, a little lukewarm tea, or milk-and-water, had been drunk, permanent relief would have been attained; or if, instead of cold water, a lump of ice had been taken into the mouth, and allowed to melt there, the effect would have been very different—a transitory application of cold increasing the flow of blood, a continuous application driving it away.

If, therefore, the reader is ever suffering from intense thirst, let him remember that tepid drinks are better than cold drinks, ice is better than water.

We must not, however, forget that although, where a deficiency of liquid has occasioned a feverish condition of the mouth and throat, no supply of cold liquid will at once remove that condition, the relief of the Systemic sensation not immediately producing relief of the local sensation, nevertheless, so long as the system is in need of liquid, the feeling of thirst must continue. Claude Bernard observed that a dog which had an opening in its stomach drank unceasingly, because the water ran out as fast as it was swallowed; in vain the water moistened mouth and throat on its way to the stomach. Thirst was not appeased because the water was not absorbed. The dog drank till fatigue forced it to pause, and a few minutes afterwards recommenced the same hopeless toil; but no sooner was the opening closed, and the water retained in the stomach, from whence it was absorbed into the system, than thirst quickly vanished.*

After learning the physiological importance of water, and remembering how the water is continually being removed from the body in respiration, perspiration, and the various excretions, we are greatly puzzled by the great variations which animals exhibit in the quantity they drink. The difficulty is not explained by a reference to the food of the animals, for some vegetable feeders require large quantities of water, while others subsist for months without drinking, the supply they receive in the vegetables they eat being sufficient for their wants.

Dr Livingstone found the elands on the Kalahari Desert, although in places where water was perfectly inaccessible, with every indication of being in splendid condition, and their stomachs actually contained considerable quantities of water. "I examined carefully the whole alimentary canal," he says, "in order to see if there were any peculiarity which might account for the fact that these animals can subsist for months together without drinking, but found nothing. Other animals, such as the düiker (*Cephalopus mergens*), the steinbuck (*Tragulus rupestris*), the gemsbuck (*Oryx capensis*), and the porcupine, are all able to subsist for many months at a time by living on bulbs and tubers containing moisture. Some animals, on the other hand, are never seen but in the vicinity of water. The presence of the rhinoceros, buffalo, and gnu, of the giraffe, zebra, and pallah (*Antelope melampus*), is always a certain indication of water being within seven or eight miles."*

---

* CLAUDE BERNARD: *Leçons de Physiologie Expérim*

The only solution of the difficulty which presents itself to my mind is, that animals which can subsist long without drinking, do not lose more water by evaporation and excretion than can be replaced by their vegetable food, since that they *require* the same amount of water as other animals for the performance of all their functions is physiologically certain. It has been observed that, in persons who voluntarily abstain from drinking, the excretions were diminished to a minimum. Sauvages, in his *Nosologia Medica*, mentions the case of a member of the University of Toulouse who never knew what thirst was, and passed several months, even in the heat of summer, without drinking. Another case is cited by the same author of a woman who took no liquid for forty days. M. Bérard thinks that the marvellousness of these facts disappears when we remember how much liquid is contained in all food;† but I am rather disposed to doubt the accuracy of the facts than to accept such an explanation: at any rate, they are facts so very exceptional as to have little bearing on our general argument.

---

* LIVINGSTONE: *Missionary Travels in South Africa*, p. 56.

† BÉRARD: *Cours de Physiologie*, vol. ii. p. 504.

The effects of Thirst are first a dryness of the mouth, palate, and throat; the secretions become less copious; the mouth is covered with a thick mucus, the tongue cleaves to the palate, the voice becomes hoarse. Then the eyes flash fire, the breathing becomes difficult, a feverish excitement, often passing into delirium, comes on.* Sleep is fitful, and distressed by dreams akin to the torments of Tantalus. The men shipwrecked in the "Medusa" dreamt constantly of shady woods and running streams.

It is to be noticed that the sensation of Thirst is never agreeable, no matter how slight it may be, and in this respect is unlike Hunger, which, in its incipient state of Appetite, is decidedly agreeable. The bodies of those who have perished from Thirst show a general dryness of all the tissues, a thickening of the humours, a certain degree of coagulation of the blood, numberless indications of inflammation, and sometimes gangrene of the principal viscera. According to Longet, Thirst kills by an inflammatory fever, Hunger by a putrid fever.†

---

* From some experiments by Professor E. HARLESS, in Munich, at which I assisted, it appeared that the nerves gain an extraordinary *increase* in their excitability as their proportion of water decreases. (For a fuller account of this remarkable fact, see BIRKNER, *Das Wasser der Nerven*, 1858.) The nervous excitability, delirium, and sleeplessness, occasioned by Thirst, may be greatly owing to this cause.

† LONGET: *Traité de Physiologie.*

Such are Hunger and Thirst, two mighty impulses, beneficent and terrible, monitors ever vigilant, warning us of the need there is for Food and Drink—sources of exquisite pleasure and of exquisite pains, motives to strenuous endeavour, and servants to our higher aims. We are all familiar with them in their gentler aspects; may we never know them in their dreadful importunities!

CHAPTER II.

FOOD AND DRINK.

SECTION I.—ON THE NATURE OF FOOD.

Varieties of food—The eaters of clay—The chemical and physiological methods of investigation—"One man's meat another man's poison" illustrated—A caution to parents—Wholesome and unwholesome food—Relation of food to the organism—Vital processes incapable of chemical explanation—Difference between chemistry and physiology—A canon of philosophy—is the family a type of the State: Chemical problems are quantitative; physiological problems qualitative—Liebig's classification of food into plastic and respiratory, un-acceptable—Liebig's error arises from his taking the chemical point of view—Facts against him—Experiments on animals—The rice-eating Hindoos—The food in cold countries—[illegible]—Inorganic food—Nutrition in plants and animals [illegible]. Phosphate of lime in the body; amount of water in the body; amount of salt—Uses of salt—The law of [illegible].

An Irish peasant, in a windowless hut, dining off a meal of potatoes and skimmed milk, flavoured by the aroma of a lively imagination as each mouthful is "pointed" at the side of bacon hanging against the wall, and a London Alderman seated at a Guildhall feast, are two figures presenting an impressive contrast of the varieties of Food with which, in the endless activity of life, the human organism repairs its incessant waste. Potatoes and skimmed milk, and it may be a little sea-weed, supply the wants of the one; before the other there is spread a wasteful profusion of turtle captured on the North American coasts, of turkey reared in quiet farmyards, of mutton grazed upon the downs of Sussex, of beef fed on the rich pasture-lands of Herefordshire, of pheasants shot in a nobleman's preserves, of turbot from the Atlantic Ocean, and salmon from the Scotch and Irish rivers, of cheese from France and Switzerland, oil from Italy, spices from the East, and wines from Portugal, Germany, and France — a gathering from all nations, assorted with exquisite culinary skill. Yet, in spite of these differences in the things consumed by the two men, the dinner of the one and the dinner of the other become transmuted by vital processes into similar flesh and blood, into the same organic substance and organic force.

However various the articles of Food and Drink may be, it is clear that there must be a process by which all differences are annulled, and a similar result attained. Whatever characters these substances may have *outside* the organism, must be altered shortly after their entrance *into* it, specific differences must vanish, and all varieties be merged in a vital unity.

The hunter on the Pampas subsists on buffalo beef, with scarcely a particle of vegetable food to vary his diet. The Hindoo is content with rice and rancid butter, and cannot be induced to eat flesh. The Greenlander gorges himself with whale oil, and animal fats of any kind he can secure; the moderate Arab has his bag of dates, his lotos-bread, and dhourra. On the coast of Malabar we find men regarding with religious horror every species of animal food; while the native of New Holland has not a single edible fruit larger than a cherry on the whole surface of his vast island. The Englishman considers himself ignominiously treated by fortune if he cannot get his beef or bacon; the peasant of the Apennines is cheerful with his meal of chestnuts.

Besides varieties in the staple articles of Food, there are the infinite varieties of fancy. Our Chinese friends make delicacies of rats and of birds' nests; our French allies are epicurean over the hind-legs of frogs. The ancients, who carried epicureanism to lengths never dreamed of by Guildhall, thought the hedgehog a titbit, and had a word to say in favour of the donkey, which they placed on an equality with the ox; dogs they considered equal to chickens; and even cats were not to be despised. The pork, which we eat with great confidence, they considered, and not untruly, the least digestible of animal meats, fit only for artisans and athletes. They ate snails, at which we shudder, with the gusto we acknowledge in eating oysters. It would be difficult to persuade the British stomach to dine, in full consciousness, off a "sirloin of donkey," flanked by "ribs of dog, with fried toadstools." Is this repugnance only prejudice, or were Greek dogs and donkeys more succulent than ours?

The Clay-eaters.—The varieties just rehearsed are at any rate easily accepted as probable aliments, but what will the reader say on hearing that in many parts of the world even clay is a respectable and respected food? Travellers, who see strange things, are very positive in their assertions on this head. Humboldt, a man whose word justly carries with it European authority, confirms the statement of Gumilla, that the Otomacs of South America, during the periods of the floods, subsist entirely on a fat and ferruginous clay, of which each man eats daily a pound or more. The well-known botanist and explorer, Martius, informed me that the Indians of the Amazon eat a kind of loam, even when other food is abundant. Molina says the Peruvians frequently eat a sweet-smelling clay; and Ehrenberg has analysed the edible clay sold in the markets of Bolivia, which he finds to be a mixture of talc and mica. The inhabitants of Guiana mingle clay with their bread; and the negroes in Jamaica are said to eat earth when other food is deficient. According to Labillardière, the inhabitants of New Caledonia appease their hunger with a white friable earth, said by Vauquelin to be composed of magnesia, silica, oxide of iron, and chalk. The same writer asserts that at Java a cake is made of ferruginous clay which is much sought for by women in their pregnancy. To conclude this list we must add Siam, Siberia, and Kamtschatka as countries of clay-eaters.*

This is rather a staggering accumulation of assertions, which we cannot dismiss altogether, even if we suppose a large allowance of scepticism justifiable. Granting the fact that certain kinds of earth are really nutritious—and it is difficult to escape such a conclusion—we are completely at a loss for an adequate explanation of it. Little light is thrown on it by the assumption, probable enough, that the earth must contain organic matters; because we should imagine that in ten pounds of such earth there could scarcely be contained sufficient organic matter to supply the demands of an adult.

---

* BURDACH: *Traité de Physiologie*, ix. 260.

Nor will it get rid of the difficulty to say that the earth only appeases hunger without nourishing the system; because, in the first place, Humboldt's testimony is that the Otomacs *subsist* on the clay at periods when other food is deficient; and, in the second place, although the *local* sensation of Hunger may be appeased by introducing substances into the stomach, the more imperious *systemic* sensation of Hunger is not thus to be appeased.*

We must, therefore, be content, at present, with accepting the fact, which the science of a future day may possibly explain.

Omitting clay, as not explicable for the present, we propose to take the reader with us in an inquiry, having for its object to ascertain what Science can tell us positively respecting the relation of alimentary substances and the organism—to see what is known respecting Food and its varieties. If in the course of this survey we detain the reader to consider certain generalities, when he is impatient to arrive at the details, let him be assured that these generalities, seemingly too abstract and remote for immediate practical objects, are essential to a right comprehension of the details; and that our most practical and pressing objects, whether of feeding cattle, or feeding ourselves, do inevitably rest upon abstract philosophic principles, and are determined by scientific hypotheses. We promise him abundant detail, but must ask him to approach the question through such avenues as we shall open, and not to try any short cut of his own.

---

* See the Chapter on HUNGER AND THIRST.

I. HOW TO INVESTIGATE FOOD.—Assured as we are that all alimentary substances must be transformed into the organic unity we name Blood, and assured also that the substances so transformed are really various in kind, specifically distinct *before* they have undergone this transformation, it is clear that our chief attention should be withdrawn from the alimentary *substances* to fall with greater emphasis on the alimentary *process;* that is to say, we must less consider what the Foods are in themselves, than *what relation* they bear to the organism which they nourish.

Obvious as this may seem, it has generally been disregarded, especially of late years. The researches into the nature of Food have been extensive and minute, but they have been almost exclusively confined to alimentary substances, which have been analysed, weighed, and tabulated with great labour, and in a chemical point of view with considerable results;

but in a physiological point of view—the only one really implicated—with scarcely any results at all. No one doubts that Food is a physiological question, inasmuch as it relates to an organism. Nevertheless, it has fallen into the hands of the chemists; and our treatises, text-books, and popular works, have been encumbered by hypotheses which may amuse speculative ingenuity, but furnish very little positive result.

Against this vice of Method, and this misdirection of valuable labour, a voice should energetically be raised. The error is not a speculative error, simply; it is one carrying important consequences; it either leads physicians and farmers into serious mistakes, or leads them to throw up scientific guidance in disgust, because the hypothesis, so convincing on paper, turns out stubbornly irreconcilable with fact.

Let us not, however, be misunderstood. In declaring the chemical hypothesis on the subject of Food to which Liebig, Dumas, Boussingault, Payen, and others, have given the sanction of their names, to be more of an encumbrance than an illumination, we have not the remotest intention of undervaluing their labours. All real work is important, no genuine research is unworthy of our gratitude; but it is one thing to reverence power, and respect the work achieved, another thing to assign the nature and position of that work. With regard to the vast chemical researches into the subject of Food which have occupied a quarter of a century, it seems to me that their value has been almost exclusively *chemical*, and only in an indirect the agreeable jelly which pork-butchers prepare from a decoction of different parts of the pig was given them, they ate it with relish at first, then ceased to eat it, and died on the twentieth day, of inanition; when bread, or meat, in small quantities, was given, the dogs lived a longer time, but grew gradually thinner, and all finally perished. A striking difference was observed between bone-soup and meat-soup: the animals starved on the first, and flourished on the second.

The conclusion generally drawn from this Report is, that Gelatine is *not* a nutritive substance. But all that is really proved by the experiments is that Gelatine *alone* is insufficient for nutrition; a conclusion which is equally true of albumen, fibrine, or any other single substance. For perfect nutrition there must be a mixture of inorganic and organic substances: salts, fats, sugars, and albuminates.

When animals are fed on albumen alone, or white of egg alone, with water as the single inorganic element, they perish; but they live perfectly well on raw bones and water—the reason being that bones contain salts and small proportions of albumen and fats, to supplement the Gelatine, and *they contain these in the state of organic combination*, not in the state of chemical products.

The paramount importance of this last condition may be gathered from the experiments mentioned in the Gelatine Report—namely, that boiling the bones, or digesting them in hydrochloric acid, and thus resolving their cartilaginous tissue into Gelatine, *destroyed* this nutritive quality. The very bones which, when raw, supported life, failed utterly when boiled. This seems to show that Gelatine is so altered by heat as to lose its power of fermenting, and so passing through the transformation necessary to assimilation.

Attention is called to the fact of the very small proportions of Albumen which exist in the bones, as strikingly confirming my hypothesis respecting the power of the organism to form Albumen for itself, if a small amount be present to act as a sort of leaven. Moleschott also maintains, on other grounds, that Gelatine must be converted into Albumen, since the amount of Albumen in bones is in itself utterly insufficient for the demands of the tissues;* and Mulder points to the fact that, when an animal is fed on Gelatine, we never find this substance passing away in the excreta: a sufficient proof that it must in some way have been incorporated with the organism, or decomposed in it, to subserve the purposes of nutrition.†

Physiologists who admit *some* nutritive quality in Gelatine, have suggested that it is confined to the formation of the gelatinous tissues. This is one of those hypotheses which seduce by their plausibility; and accordingly it has been frequently adopted, although physiological scrutiny detects that this is precisely one of the uses to which Gelatine can *not* be turned. For on the one hand we see that the herbivora have gelatinous tissues, although they eat *no* Gelatine; and, on the other hand,

we see that even the carnivora, who do obtain it in their ordinary food, cannot form their gelatinous tissues out of it, because Gelatine is never found in their blood, from which all their tissues are formed.

---

* MOLESCHOTT, *Kreislauf des Lebens*, p. 135.

† MULDER, *Physiol. Chemie*, p 937.

Bernard has shown that part of the Gelatine is converted into sugar ; and sugar, we know, is necessary to the organism. It may also be converted into fat ; and, as has been said, there is much evidence to show that it may be converted into Albumen, among the complex processes of vital chemistry ; but whatever may be the decision respecting this point, there can be no legitimate reason for denying that Gelatine ranks among nutritive principles.

6. *Fats and Oils.*—These are various and important, including suet, lard, marrow, butter, and fixed oils. Vegetables also yield a great variety of oils, fixed, and volatile or essential. The quantity procurable from 100 parts of vegetable and animal substances is as follows :—

Filberts,	60
Olive seeds,	54
Cocoa-nut,	47
Almonds,	46
White mustard,	36
Linseed,	22
Maize,	9
Yolk of Eggs,	28.75
Ordinary meat,	14. 3
Caviare,	4. 3
Ox-liver,	3.89

Milk, Cows',	3.13
„ Women's,	3.55
Milk, Asses',	0.11
„ Goats',	3.32
„ Ewes',	4.20
Bones of sheep's feet,	5.55
„ of ox-head,	11.54*

Fats and oils are all difficult of digestion—more so, indeed, than most other principles; but the degree in which they are digestible is very much a matter of individual peculiarity, some men digesting large quantities with ease, others being unable to digest even small quantities.

M. Berthé instituted an elaborate series of experiments on his own person, with the view of ascertaining the comparative digestibility of various fats and oils.† The following classification of his results is all we can find space for.

First class, comprising those difficult of digestion: Olive oil, almond oil, poppy-seed oil.

Second class, comprising those easy of digestion: Whale oil, butter and animal fats, colourless liver-oil.

Third class, comprising those very easy of digestion: Pure liver-oil.

It should be remembered that great differences are observable according to the state in which oils are eaten. If taken by themselves, they are scarcely

ing feelings excited in many dyspeptics by the ingestion of mutton-fat, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way readily accounted for, since all these substances contain each one or more volatile acids to which they owe their odour. Thus mutton-fat contains hircic acid; butter, no less than three volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric, and caproic acids; while train-oil contains phocenic acid."*

---

* PEREIRA: *Treatise on Diet*, p. 167.

† BERTHÉ: *Moniteur des Hôpitaux*, 1856, No. 69. CANNSTATT: *Jahresbericht* 1856, p. 69-72.

The effect of a high temperature on fat is to render it still more unsuitable to the stomach; and all persons troubled with an awful consciousness of what Digestion is, and not living in that happy eupeptic ignorance which only knows Digestion as a name, should avoid food in the cooking of which much fat or oil has been subjected to a high temperature—as in frying in butter or lard. Melted butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-puddings, fat hashes and stews, are afflictions to the dyspeptic; and although the oil which is eaten with salad does not assist the digestion of the salad, as many writers and most salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly far more digestible than any fat or oil which has been cooked, probably because it contains no free volatile acid.

Besides the fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain volatile (essential) oils employed as condiments. These are contained in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint, thyme, marjoram, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway; to which may be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-cress, onions, leeks, and various spices. The vola-

ing feelings excited in many dyspeptics by the ingestion of mutton-fat, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way readily accounted for, since all these substances contain each one or more volatile acids to which they owe their odour. Thus mutton-fat contains hircic acid; butter, no less than three volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric, and caproic acids; while train-oil contains phocenic acid."*

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

The effect of a high temperature on fat is to render it still more unsuitable to the stomach; and all persons troubled with an awful consciousness of what Digestion is, and not living in that happy eupeptic ignorance which only knows Digestion as a name, should avoid food in the cooking of which much fat or oil has been subjected to a high temperature—as in frying in butter or lard. Melted butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-puddings, fat hashes and stews, are afflictions to the dyspeptic; and although the oil which is eaten with salad does not assist the digestion of the salad, as many writers and most salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly far more digestible than any fat or oil which has been cooked, probably because it contains no free volatile acid.

Besides the fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain volatile (essential) oils employed as condiments. These are contained in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint, thyme, marjoram, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway; to which may be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-cress, onions, leeks, and various spices. The vola-

ing feelings excited in many dyspeptics by the ingestion of mutton-fat, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way readily accounted for, since all these substances contain each one or more volatile acids to which they owe their odour. Thus mutton-fat contains hircic acid; butter, no less than three volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric, and caproic acids; while train-oil contains phocenic acid."*

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

The effect of a high temperature on fat is to render it still more unsuitable to the stomach; and all persons troubled with an awful consciousness of what Digestion is, and not living in that happy eupeptic ignorance which only knows Digestion as a name, should avoid food in the cooking of which much fat or oil has been subjected to a high temperature—as in frying in butter or lard. Melted butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-puddings, fat hashes and stews, are afflictions to the dyspeptic; and although the oil which is eaten with salad does not assist the digestion of the salad, as many writers and most salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly far more digestible than any fat or oil which has been cooked, probably because it contains no free volatile acid.

Besides the fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain volatile (essential) oils employed as condiments. These are contained in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint, thyme, marjoram, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway; to which may be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-cress, onions, leeks, and various spices. The vola-

ing feelings excited in many dyspeptics by the ingestion of mutton-fat, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way readily accounted for, since all these substances contain each one or more volatile acids to which they owe their odour. Thus mutton-fat contains hircic acid; butter, no less than three volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric, and caproic acids; while train-oil contains phocenic acid."*

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

The effect of a high temperature on fat is to render it still more unsuitable to the stomach; and all persons troubled with an awful consciousness of what Digestion is, and not living in that happy eupeptic ignorance which only knows Digestion as a name, should avoid food in the cooking of which much fat or oil has been subjected to a high temperature—as in frying in butter or lard. Melted butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-puddings, fat hashes and stews, are afflictions to the dyspeptic; and although the oil which is eaten with salad does not assist the digestion of the salad, as many writers and most salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly far more digestible than any fat or oil which has been cooked, probably because it contains no free volatile acid.

Besides the fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain volatile (essential) oils employed as condiments. These are contained in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint, thyme, marjoram, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway; to which may be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-cress, onions, leeks, and various spices. The vola-

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

we see that even the carni
ordinary food, cannot form
of it, because Gelatine is
from which all their tissue

Bernard has shown that
verted into sugar ; and s
to the organism. It may
and, as has been said, the
that it may be convert
complex processes of vi
may be the decision resp
no legitimate reason for
among nutritive princip

6. *Fats and Oils.*—T
including suet, lard, m
Vegetables also yield a
volatile or essential.
100 parts of vegetab
follows :—

Filberts, .
Olive seeds,
Cocoa-nut, .
Almonds, .
White mustar
Linseed, .
Maize, .
Yolk of Egg
Ordinary m
Caviare,
Ox-liver,

ited in many dyspeptics by the inges-
at, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way
d for, since all these substances contain
e volatile acids to which they owe their
utton-fat contains hircic acid; butter,
ee volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric,
ds; while train-oil contains phocenic

a high temperature on fat is to render
uitable to the stomach; and all persons
awful consciousness of what Digestion
ng in that happy eupeptic ignorance
ws Digestion as a name, should avoid
ing of which much fat or oil has been
igh temperature—as in frying in butter
d butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-
ashes and stews, are afflictions to the
although the oil which is eaten with
assist the digestion of the salad, as many
st salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly
ible than any fat or oil which has been
ly because it contains no free volatile

fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain vol-
) oils employed as condiments. These
in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint,
am, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway;
be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-
leeks, and various spices. The vola-

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

we see that even the carnivora, who do obtain it in their ordinary food, cannot form their gelatinous tissues out of it, because Gelatine is never found in their blood, from which all their tissues are formed.

Bernard has shown that part of the Gelatine is converted into sugar; and sugar, we know, is necessary to the organism. It may also be converted into fat; and, as has been said, there is much evidence to show that it may be converted into Albumen, among the complex processes of vital chemistry; but whatever may be the decision respecting this point, there can be no legitimate reason for denying that Gelatine ranks among nutritive principles.

6. *Fats and Oils.*—These are various and important, including suet, lard, marrow, butter, and fixed oils. Vegetables also yield a great variety of oils, fixed, and volatile or essential. The quantity procurable from 100 parts of vegetable and animal substances is as follows:—

Filberts,	60
Olive seeds,	54
Cocoa-nut,	47
Almonds,	46
White mustard,	36
Linseed,	22
Maize,	9
Yolk of Eggs,	28.75
Ordinary meat,	14. 3
Caviare,	4. 3
Ox-liver,	3.89

Milk, Cows', ...	3.13
„ Women's, ...	3.55
Milk, Asses', ...	0.11
„ Goats', ...	3.32
„ Ewes', ...	4.20
Bones of sheep's feet, . . .	5.55
„ of ox-head, . . .	11.54*

Fats and oils are all difficult of digestion—more so, indeed, than most other principles; but the degree in which they are digestible is very much a matter of individual peculiarity, some men digesting large quantities with ease, others being unable to digest even small quantities.

M. Berthé instituted an elaborate series of experiments on his own person, with the view of ascertaining the comparative digestibility of various fats and oils.† The following classification of his results is all we can find space for.

First class, comprising those difficult of digestion: Olive oil, almond oil, poppy-seed oil.

Second class, comprising those easy of digestion: Whale oil, butter and animal fats, colourless liver-oil.

Third class, comprising those very easy of digestion: Pure liver-oil.

It should be remembered that great differences are observable according to the state in which oils are eaten. If taken by themselves, they are scarcely

we see that even the carnivora, who do obtain it in their ordinary food, cannot form their gelatinous tissues out of it, because Gelatine is never found in their blood, from which all their tissues are formed.

---

* PEREIRA: *Treatise on Diet*, p. 167.

† BERTHÉ: *Moniteur des Hôpitaux*, 1856, No. 69. CANNSTATT: *Jahresbericht* 1856, p. 69-72.

Bernard has shown that part of the Gelatine is converted into sugar; and sugar, we know, is necessary to the organism. It may also be converted into fat; and, as has been said, there is much evidence to show that it may be converted into Albumen, among the complex processes of vital chemistry; but whatever may be the decision respecting this point, there can be no legitimate reason for denying that Gelatine ranks among nutritive principles.

6. *Fats and Oils.*—These are various and important, including suet, lard, marrow, butter, and fixed oils. Vegetables also yield a great variety of oils, fixed, and volatile or essential. The quantity procurable from 100 parts of vegetable and animal substances is as follows:—

Filberts,	60
Olive seeds,	54
Cocoa-nut,	47
Almonds,	46
White mustard,	36
Linseed,	22
Maize,	9
Yolk of Eggs,	28.75
Ordinary meat,	14. 3
Caviare,	4. 3
Ox-liver,	3.89

Milk, Cows', ...	3.13
„ Women's, ...	3.55
Milk, Asses', ...	0.11
„ Goats', ...	3.32
„ Ewes', ...	4.20
Bones of sheep's feet, . . .	5.55
„ of ox-head, . . .	11.54*

Fats and oils are all difficult of digestion—more so, indeed, than most other principles; but the degree in which they are digestible is very much a matter of individual peculiarity, some men digesting large quantities with ease, others being unable to digest even small quantities.

M. Berthé instituted an elaborate series of experiments on his own person, with the view of ascertaining the comparative digestibility of various fats and oils.† The following classification of his results is all we can find space for.

First class, comprising those difficult of digestion: Olive oil, almond oil, poppy-seed oil.

Second class, comprising those easy of digestion: Whale oil, butter and animal fats, colourless liver-oil.

Third class, comprising those very easy of digestion: Pure liver-oil.

It should be remembered that great differences are observable according to the state in which oils are eaten. If taken by themselves, they are scarcely

affected by the digestive process, and act as laxatives; but if taken mingled with other substances, they may be reduced to an emulsion, and so absorbed.

---

* PEREIRA: *Treatise on Diet*, p. 167.

† BERTHÉ: *Moniteur des Hôpitaux*, 1856, No. 69. CANNSTATT: *Jahresbericht* 1856, p. 69-72.

Thus we eat olive oil with salad, or butter with bread, and the greater part is absorbed; but the same amount of olive oil administered alone would act as a purge. It is owing, moreover, to the minute state of subdivision and mixture of the oils in all vegetable substances that they are so much more digestible than animal fats.

Dr Pereira quotes the statement of Dr Beaumont, that "bile is seldom found in the stomach, except under peculiar circumstances. I have observed that when the use of fat or oily food has been persevered in for some time, there is generally a presence of bile in the gastric fluids." Upon which Dr Pereira remarks that the popular notion of oily or fatty foods "causing bile" is not so groundless as medical men have generally supposed. The reason of fat being indigestible is thus suggested: "In many dyspeptic individuals, fat does not become properly chymified. It floats on the contents of the stomach in the form of an oily pellicle, becoming odorous, and sometimes highly rancid, and in this state excites heartburn, nausea, and eructations, or at times actual vomiting. It appears to me that the greater tendency which some oily substances have than others to disturb the stomach, depends on the greater facility with which they evolve volatile fatty acids, which are for the most part exceedingly acrid and irritating. The unpleasant and distress-

ing feelings excited in many dyspeptics by the ingestion of mutton-fat, butter, and fish-oils, are in this way readily accounted for, since all these substances contain each one or more volatile acids to which they owe their odour. Thus mutton-fat contains hircic acid; butter, no less than three volatile acids—viz. butyric, capric, and caproic acids; while train-oil contains phocenic acid."*

The effect of a high temperature on fat is to render it still more unsuitable to the stomach; and all persons troubled with an awful consciousness of what Digestion is, and not living in that happy eupeptic ignorance which only knows Digestion as a name, should avoid food in the cooking of which much fat or oil has been subjected to a high temperature—as in frying in butter or lard. Melted butter, buttered toast, pastry, suet-puddings, fat hashes and stews, are afflictions to the dyspeptic; and although the oil which is eaten with salad does not assist the digestion of the salad, as many writers and most salad-eaters maintain, it is assuredly far more digestible than any fat or oil which has been cooked, probably because it contains no free volatile acid.

Besides the fats and *fixed* oils, there are certain volatile (essential) oils employed as condiments. These are contained in the leaves and seeds of sage, mint, thyme, marjoram, fennel, parsley, anise, and caraway; to which may be added, mustard, horse-radish, water-cress, onions, leeks, and various spices. The vola-

tile oil contained in each of these substances stimulates but does not incorporate itself with the organism, and is soon ejected, retaining its characteristic odour.

---

* PEREIRA, p. 171.

7. *Starch.*—The gentle housewife, familiar with starch only in its relations to the wash-tub, will be probably surprised at meeting with it among articles of food; yet under the various names of amylum, fecula, farinaceous matter, and starch, this substance, widely distributed over the vegetable kingdom, ranks as an important alimentary principle. It must, however, be cooked before it can be eaten. It is never found in the blood, nor in the tissues, so that we are certain it is transformed during the digestive process; and some of these transformations have been detected: first, as it passes into dextrine, and thence into sugar, and most probably fat.

The various starchy substances—sago, tapioca, arrowroot, and *tous les mois*, have been so amply treated of by Professor Johnston in his admirable *Chemistry of Common Life*, that our readers need only be directed to his pages.

8. *Sugar.*—Sugar exists abundantly in vegetables, and in some animal substances, notably milk and liver. Dr Pereira has compiled the following table, which exhibits the proportion of sugar in 100 parts:—

Barley-meal, ...	5.21
Oatmeal, ...	8.25
Wheat-flour, ...	8.48
Wheat-bread, ...	3. 6

Rye-meal,	3.28
Máize,	1.45
Rice,	0.29
Pease,	2. 0
Figs,	62. 5
Greengages,	11.61
Fresh ripe pears,	6.45
Gooseberries,	6.24
Cherries,	18.12
Apricot,	11.61
Peach,	16.48
Beet-root,	9. 0

That sugar is nutritious no one doubts. Although easily digested, there are persons with whom it disagrees, and in some dyspeptics it produces flatulency and acidity. There is no tissue into the composition of which it enters as a constituent, unless we make an exception in favour of muscle, in which Scherer has discovered a substance, by him named *inosite*, having the chemical composition of sugar (C^{12} H^{12} O^{12}), but having none of its characteristic properties, and existing, moreover, in extremely minute quantities.

The sugar we find in the blood and milk is not derived from the sugar we eat; *that* is transformed into fat, lactic acid, and other substances. The sugar of the blood is formed partly from the starchy substances of our food during the process of digestion; the rest is formed *by* the liver, and is formed *from* albuminous substances in their passage through the liver; the quantity being wholly independent of any amount of sugar taken in the food, and being the same in amount when *none* is taken in the food.*

Because sugar forms part of no tissue, and is a carbo-hydrate, it is classed by Liebig's school among heat-making foods. But we not only saw ample reason for rejecting such an idea when we considered the general question—we must even more peremptorily reject it, now that we come to grapple with the details. Against the supposition of sugar having no plastic property, it is enough to oppose the fact that many insects feed solely on sugar and saccharine juices; and in them, therefore, it is clear that something more than heat is evolved from sugar. Lehmann also bids us remember that in the egg a small quantity of sugar exists, and this quantity increases, instead of diminishing, as the development of the chick proceeds; whereas, if sugar only served for purposes of oxidation, it would be oxidised and disappear as development advanced.

In the *Chemistry of Common Life,* the subject of sugar is treated in detail, which renders repetition here superfluous. Two questions only need be touched on, Is sugar injurious to the teeth? Is it injurious to the stomach?

---

* CLAUDE BERNARD'S discovery of this sugar-forming function of the liver has been attacked by FIGUIER, LONGET, and others; but the discussion, after exciting considerable sensation, may now be said to be finally closed in BERNARD'S favour. See his masterly *Leçons de Physiol. Expérimentale,* 1854-5; and the *Mémoires* on both sides in the *Annales des Sciences Naturelles,* 1854-6; and the Report of the Commission appointed by the Académie de Medicine, reprinted in BROWN SÉQUARD'S *Journal de la Physiologie,* i. 549.

To answer the former ~~first~~, we have only to point to the Negroes, who eat more sugar than any other human beings, and whose teeth are of enviable splendour and strength.

To answer the second is not so easy; yet, when we learn the many important offices which sugar fulfils in the organism, we may be certain that, if injurious at all, it is only so in excess. The lactic acid formed from sugar dissolves phosphate of lime, and this, as we know, is the principal ingredient of bones and teeth. By its dissolution it becomes accessible to the bones and teeth; and as sugar effects this, its utility is vindicated. But a surer argument is founded on the instinct of mankind. If we all so eagerly eat sugar, it is because there is a natural relation between it and our organism.

Timid parents may therefore check their alarm at the sight of juvenile forays on the sugar-basin when not excessive; may cease to vex children by forbidding moderate commercial transactions with the lollypop merchant, and cease to frustrate their desires for barley-sugar by the never-appreciated pretext, that the interdict is "for their good."

9. *Alcohol.*—If it astonished the reader to see water and salts classed as alimentary principles, if it puzzled the housewife to see starch placed on the same list, it will we fear exasperate the members of Temperance Societies to see alcohol elevated to that rank. They are accustomed to call alcohol a *poison*, to preach against it as poisonous in large doses or small, concentrated or diluted. Nevertheless, in compliance

with the dictates of Physiology, and, let me add, in compliance also with the custom of physiologists, we are forced to call alcohol food, and very efficient food too. If it be not food, then neither is sugar food, nor starch, nor any of those manifold substances employed by man which do not enter into the composition of his tissues. That it produces poisonous effects when concentrated and taken in large doses, is perfectly true; but that similar effects follow when *diluted*, and taken in small doses, is manifestly false, as proved by daily experience.

Every person practically acquainted with the subject knows that concentrated alcohol has, among other effects, that of depriving the mucus membrane of the stomach of all its water—*i. e.* of hardening it, and destroying its powers of secretion; whereas diluted alcohol does nothing of the kind, but *increases* the secretion by the stimulus it gives to the circulation. The alcohol is always much diluted which is taken in wines or spirits.

An instructive illustration of the difference between a concentrated and diluted dose is seen in Bardeleben's experiment on dogs. He found that forty-five grains of common salt, introduced at once into the stomach through an opening, occasioned a secretion of mucus, followed by vomitings; whereas five times that amount of salt in *solution* produced neither of these effects. The explanation is simple, and will be understood by any one who has seen the salt, which was sprinkled over a round of beef, converted into brine, owing to the attraction exercised by the salt on the water in the beef: this attraction is incalculably smaller when the salt is in solution, and the salt is already saturated.

We might multiply examples of the differences which result from the use of *concentrated* and *diluted* agents, or from differences in the quantities employed; as when a certain amount of acid assists digestion, but, if increased, arrests it. But the demonstration of such a position is unnecessary, since no well-informed physiologist will deny it. The fallacy of concluding that whatever is true of a large quantity of concentrated alcohol is equally true, in a proportionate degree, of a small quantity of diluted alcohol, lies indeed at the basis of the Total Abstinence doctrine. But we need scarcely tell the student that the difference of effect is absolute: a difference in *kind*, and not simply in degree.

Another fallacy in the Teetotal argument, and one constantly invoked, is this: You must abstain altogether from alcoholic drinks, since, unless you abstain, you are certain to end in excess. Moderation necessarily becomes excess, because the frame gets habituated to stimulants; and thus, to produce the original effect, you must gradually increase the dose: according to Dr Carpenter, that which was "at first sufficient to whet the appetite and increase the digestive power, being no longer found adequate."

I have elsewhere* answered this, as well as the other fallacies of Teetotalism, and will venture to repeat a few sentences here: "He who drinks will drink again, and Moderation, we know, oils the hinges of the gate leading to Excess. Nobody doubts the danger. The only absolute preservative against taking too much, is to take none. But to suppose there is any necessary connection between moderation and excess, is to ignore physiology, and fly in the face of evidence. . . . . Men take their pint of beer, or pint of wine daily, for a series of years. This dose daily produces its effect; and if at any time thirst or social seduction makes them drink a quart in lieu of a pint, they are at once made aware of the excess. Men drink one or two cups of tea or coffee at breakfast with unvarying regularity, for a whole lifetime; but who ever felt the necessity of gradually increasing the amount to three, four, or five cups? Yet we know what a stimulant tea is; we know that treble the amount of our daily consumption would soon produce paralysis—why are we not irresistibly led to this fatal excess? Every time fresh oil is poured on fresh burning coal, the same phenomenon presents itself; every time an eel is skinned, he wriggles with ancestral vigour, and will *not* become 'used to it.' In like manner, every time a fresh stimulus is applied to fresh nerve tissue, the original effect ensues. For we must not forget this: the tissue burnt to-day is not the tissue that was burnt yesterday; the nerve particles stimulated by alcohol to-day will not be living to-morrow, when fresh stimulus is applied. Change—incessant change, is the law of our being. Fresh food renews fresh tissue for fresh stimulants to act upon. The basket is always wriggling with eels; but the eels are strangers, and can't get used to skinning."

---

* *Westminster Review.* New Series, vol. viii. Art. *The Physiological Errors of Teetotalism.* Compare, also, CHAMBERS: *Digestion and its Derangements*, p. 526-29, where some of the arguments are restated.

On the other hand, it is needless to dwell on the dangers which unhappily surround the use of alcohol. Terrible is the power of this "tricksy spirit;" and when acting in conjunction with ignorance and sensuality, its effects are appalling. So serious an influence does it exercise on human welfare, that we may readily extenuate the too frequent exaggerations of those zealous men who have engaged in a league for its total suppression. So glaring are the evils of intemperance, that we must always respect the motives of Temperance Societies, even when we most regret their exaggerations. They are fighting against a hideous vice, and we must the more regret when zeal for the cause leads them, as it generally leads partisans, to make sweeping charges, which common sense is forced to reject. All honour for the brave and sincere; all scorn for the noisy shallow quacks who make a trade of the cause!

No real gain can be achieved by any cause when it eludes or perverts the truth; and whatever temporary effect, in speeches or writings, may arise from the iteration of the statement that alcohol is poison—a poison in small quantities, as in large—always and everywhere poisonous—the cause must permanently lose ground, because daily experience repudiates such a statement as manifestly false. Alcohol *replaces* a given amount of ordinary food. Liebig tells us that, in Temperance families where beer was withheld and money given in compensation, it was soon found that the monthly consumption of bread was so strikingly increased, that the beer was twice paid for, once in money, and a second time in bread. He also reports the experience of the landlord of the Hôtel de Russie, at Frankfort, during the Peace Congress: the members of this Congress were mostly teetotallers, and a regular deficiency was observed every day in certain dishes, especially farinaceous dishes, puddings, &c. So unheard-of a deficiency, in an establishment where for years the amount of dishes for a given number of persons had so well been known, excited the landlord's astonishment. It was found that men made up in pudding what they neglected in wine. Every one knows how little the drunkard eats: to him alcohol replaces a given amount of food.

The general opinion among physiologists is, that alcohol is only heat-producing food, and that it thereby saves the consumption of tissue. Moleschott says that, although forming none of the constituents of blood, alcohol limits the combustion of those constituents, and in this way is equivalent to so much blood. "He who has little can give but little, if he wish to retain as much as one who is prodigal of his wealth. Alcohol is the savings' bank of the tissues. He who eats little, and drinks alcohol in moderation, retains as much in his blood and tissues as he who eats more, and drinks no alcohol."* But the physiological action of alcohol is still unexplained; we know that it does sustain and increase the force of the body; we know that it supplies the place of a certain quantity of food; but *how* it does this we do not know. It is said to be "burnt" in the body, and to make its exit as carbonic acid and water; but no proof has yet been offered of this assertion. Some of it escapes in the breath, and in certain of the secretions; but how much escapes in this way, and what becomes of the rest, if any, is at present a mystery.

---

* MOLESCHOTT: *Lehre der Nahrungsmittel*, p. 162.

10. *Iron.*—We are passing from surprise to surprise as we in turn arrive at substances undoubtedly claiming rank among alimentary principles, which nevertheless, in the ordinary conceptions of men, are the very opposites of Food. After water, phosphates, starch, and alcohol, are we now to celebrate the nutritive qualities of iron? Even so. That metal circulates in our blood, forming indeed an *essential* element of the blood-discs—existing in all pigments—in the bile—in various other places—notably in the hair, where it is abundant in proportion to the darkness of the colour.

The quantity of iron in the blood is but small; varying in different individuals, and different states of the same individual; those who are of what is called the sanguine temperament have more than those of the lymphatic temperament; those who are well-fed have more than those who are ill-fed. It is in almost all our animal and vegetable food, so that we do not habitually need to seek it; but the physician often has

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily; the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold which would go off. Meantime from dry, it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhoea terminated her life."

Therefore [illegible]

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess i impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked little while ago, experiments on artificial digestio show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, dige tion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain poi digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, orga life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the uccess of the experiment, and continued it for more han a month. She began to have a cough; but it was ry at its commencement, and was considered as a ight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; ght-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs suc- ded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.[*]

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food ; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food ; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids ; an our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our col meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there i no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess impairs the digestive organs ; and, as we remarked little while ago, experiments on artificial digesti show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, dige tion is retarded ; if increased beyond a certain poi digestion is arrested.

---

[*] "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, org life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and er plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the uccess of the experiment, and continued it for more han a month. She began to have a cough; but it was ry at its commencement, and was considered as a ight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty breathing; *her body* became lean, and wasted away; ht-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs suc-ded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

herefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine raceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; an our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our col meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked little while ago, experiments on artificial digesti show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, dig tion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain poi digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, or life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and er plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the ccess of the experiment, and continued it for more an a month. She began to have a *cough*; but it was y at its commencement, and was considered as a ght cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty breathing; *her body* became lean, and wasted away; ht-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs sucded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

herefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine raceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily; the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; bu they are also taken separately, especially the asceti acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has eith by accident or design been employed by mankind all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containi it have been employed as aliments, or it has be formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegeta are necessary to man, although not necessary to carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolo abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-ju now always given to sailors with their food; it tects them from scurvy, which no amount of vine sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids our salads and greens demand vinegar, as o meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, t no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in e impairs the digestive organs; and, as we rem little while ago, experiments on artificial d show that if the quantity of acid be diminishe tion is retarded; if increased beyond a certai digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from fo life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who read the disappearance of their graceful outline in ves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; they can only so arrest it at the far more dread- expense of their health. The amount of acid which keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers. rtal gives a case which should be a warning: "A years ago a young lady in easy circumstances ed good health; she was very plump, had a good ite, and a complexion blooming with roses and She began to look upon her plumpness with n; for her mother was very fat, and she was becoming like her. Accordingly, she con- voman, who advised her to drink a glass of ily: the young lady followed her advice, and ss diminished. She was delighted with the he experiment, and continued it for more She began to have a cough; but it was umencement, and was considered as a h would go off. Meantime, from dry a slow fever came on, and a difficulty body became lean, and wasted away; g of the feet and of the legs suc- ea terminated her life." adies, be boldly fat! never pine d romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily: the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

to prescribe it, either in the form of "steel-wine," or in that of chalybeate waters.*

11. *Phosphorus* and *Sulphur* are also indispensable, but they are received with our food.

12. *Acids* are received with vegetable food; but they are also taken separately, especially the ascetic acid, or vinegar, which, according to Prout, has either by accident or design been employed by mankind in all ages—that is to say, substances naturally containing it have been employed as aliments, or it has been formed artificially.

It is owing to their acids that fruits and vegetables are necessary to man, although not necessary to the carnivora. Dr Budd justly points to the prolonged abstinence from succulent vegetables and fruits as the cause of the scurvy among sailors. Lemon-juice is now always given to sailors with their food; it protects them from scurvy, which no amount of vinegar is sufficient to effect.

We make cooling drinks with vegetable acids; and our salads and greens demand vinegar, as our cold meat demands pickles. Taken in moderation, there is no doubt that vinegar is beneficial, but in excess it impairs the digestive organs; and, as we remarked a little while ago, experiments on artificial digestion show that if the quantity of acid be diminished, digestion is retarded; if increased beyond a certain point, digestion is arrested.

---

* "It is quite certain that if iron be excluded from food, organic life cannot be supported."—LIEBIG.

There is reason, therefore, in the vulgar notion, unhappily too fondly relied on, that vinegar helps to keep down an alarming adiposity, and that ladies who dread the disappearance of their graceful outline in curves of plumpness expanding into "fat," may arrest so dreadful a result by liberal potations of vinegar; but they can only so arrest it at the far more dreadful expense of their health. The amount of acid which will keep them thin, will destroy their digestive powers.

Portal gives a case which should be a warning: "A few years ago a young lady in easy circumstances enjoyed good health; she was very plump, had a good appetite, and a complexion blooming with roses and lilies. She began to look upon her plumpness with suspicion; for her mother was very fat, and she was afraid of becoming like her. Accordingly, she consulted a woman, who advised her to drink a glass of vinegar daily; the young lady followed her advice, and her plumpness diminished. She was delighted with the success of the experiment, and continued it for more than a month. She began to have a cough; but it was dry at its commencement, and was considered as a slight cold, which would go off. Meantime, from dry it became moist; a slow fever came on, and a difficulty of breathing; her body became lean, and wasted away; night-sweats, swelling of the feet and of the legs succeeded, and a diarrhœa terminated her life."

Therefore, young ladies, be boldly fat! never pine for graceful slimness and romantic palor; but if Nature

means you to be ruddy and rotund, accept it with a laughing grace, which will captivate more hearts than all the paleness of a Circulating Library. At any rate, understand this, that if vinegar will diminish the fat, it can only do so by affecting your health.

We have thus touched upon the chief Alimentary Principles, and will now review the Compound Aliments, or those articles of Food and Drink which constitute and vary our diet.

CHAPTER II.

(Continued.)

FOOD AND DRINK.

SECTION III.—ARTICLES OF FOOD.

Meats—The flavouring substance of meat, *osmazome*—The flesh of young animals—The age of animals in relation to the digestibility of their flesh—Effects of roasting, boiling, and baking—German and French meat—Digestibility of different meats—Sweetbread and tripe—Horse-flesh as food: experiments to establish the excellence of horse-beef—Quantities of horse-flesh consumed in various countries—The flesh of donkeys—Fish: digestibility of different kinds—Nutritive quality of fish—Are fish-eaters unusually prolific?—Eggs—Pastry: is it injurious?—Vegetables—Vegetarianism—Tea, coffee, and the narcotics: curious physiological paradox of their action—The quantity of food requisite for man—Individual varieties in the quantity needed—Error of applying arithmetic to vital problems—The gluttony of some races—Does a cold climate produce inordinate eating?—The rations of paupers and soldiers.

MAN is said, with but slight exaggeration, to be omnivorous. If he does not eat of all things, he eats so multifariously, that our limits would be insufficient to include even a superficial account of all the substances employed by him as Food. We must therefore be content to let attention fall on the principal groups.

1. *Meats.*—It is superfluous to dwell on the fact that the flesh of most herbivora, both wild and domestic, is both agreeable and nutritious; even the advocates of a purely vegetable diet do not dispute the flavour or the potency of flesh, whatever consequences they may attribute to the eating of it. It contains some of the chief alimentary principles: namely, albumen, fibrine, fat, gelatine, water, salts, and *osmazome.*

The last-named is a substance of reddish-brown colour, having the smell and flavour of soup (whence the name—ὀσμη, smell, and ζωμος, soup); it varies in various animals, increasing with their age. It is this osmazome, developed during the process of cooking, which gives their characteristic flavours to beef, mutton, goat-flesh, and birds, &c.

The flesh of young animals is tenderer than that of adults; and tenderness is one quality which favours digestibility. Nevertheless we shall err if, fixing our attention on this one quality, we assume that the flesh of young animals is always more digestible than that of adults; we shall find veal to be less so than beef, and chicken less so than beef. The reason given for the first of these exceptions is, that veal has less of the peculiar aroma developed in cooking; the reason given for the second is, that the texture of chicken is closer than that of beef, and, being closer, is less readily acted on by the gastric juice. Every one knows that veal is not very digestible, and is always shunned by the dyspeptic. On the other hand, in spite of chicken being less digestible than beef, it is more suitable for a delicate stomach, and will be assimilated when beef, or other meat, would not remain in the stomach,—an example which shows us that even the rule of nutritive value, being determined in a great measure by digestibility, is not absolute; and which further shows how cautious we should be in relying upon general rules in cases so complex.

The age of animals is very important. Thus the flesh of the kid is very agreeable; but as the kid approaches the adult period, there is so pronounced an odour developed from the hircic acid in its fat, that the flesh becomes uneatable. Whereas the ox and cow, fattened for two years after reaching full growth, have acquired the perfection of their aroma and flavour. The difference between lamb and mutton is very marked, especially in their fat, that of mutton containing more fatty acid, and being to many stomachs quite intolerable.

"All the savoury constituents of flesh are contained in the juice, and may be entirely removed by lixiviation (process of dissolving) with cold water. When the watery infusion of flesh thus obtained, which is commonly tinged red by some of the colouring matter of the blood, is gradually heated to boiling, the *albumen of flesh* separates, when the temperature has risen to 133° Fahr., in nearly colourless cheesy flocculi; the colouring matter of the blood is not coagulated till the temperature rises to 158°.

"The proportion of the albumen of flesh separated as a coagulum by heat is very various, according to the age of the animal. The flesh of old animals often yields no more than 1 or 2 per cent; that of young animals as much as 14 per cent.

France must have repeatedly marvelled at the singular uniformity in the flavour, or want of flavour, of the various "roasts" served up at the *table-d'hôte.* The general explanation is, that the German and French meat is greatly inferior in quality to that of England and Holland, owing to inferiority of pasturage; and, doubtless, this is one cause, but it is not the chief cause. The meat is inferior, but the cooking is mainly at fault. The meat is scarcely ever *roasted,* because there is no coal, and firewood is expensive. The meat is therefore *baked;* and the consequence of this baking is, that no meat is eatable, or eaten, with its own gravy, but is always accompanied by some sauce more or less piquant. The Germans generally believe that in England we eat our beef and mutton almost raw; they shudder at our gravy, as if it were so much blood.

I have ascertained that it is really the cooking, and not the meat, which is in fault; for at the tables of great people, or resident English, where *roast* meat is served, the flavour is excellent. Moreover, the game, at a *table-d'hôte,* is almost as tasteless as the poultry, partridges having little of their well-known flavour:

> "Longe dissimilem noto celantia succum;" *

and hare, that "well-flavoured beast," eulogised by Charles Lamb, is rendered undistinguishable from beef, except perhaps in tenderness; while venison may be mistaken for kid.

In the inferior eating-houses of London the meat is also baked, for the sake of economy, and is notoriously deficient in that agreeable flavour which roast-meat possesses. If it were baked as thoroughly as it is in Germany, the meat in such eating-houses would be as tasteless.

---

* HORACE, *Sat.* ii. 8, makes this complaint of bad cookery in his day.

Dr Beaumont has drawn up tables of the comparative digestibility of various substances, to which succeeding writers have referred, without always perceiving that Dr Beaumont's observations, being confined to what takes place in the stomach, which is only *one* part of the digestive process, do not throw any light upon what takes place in the intestines—by far the more important part of the process*—and can only have a limited value, because they can only apply to those substances which are in any degree influenced by the gastric juice. Bearing this in mind, and accepting the following figures as indications only, they will be found useful—

		Hour.	Min.
Venison steak, broiled, .	requires	1	35
Pig, sucking, roasted, .	,,	2	30
Lamb, fresh, broiled, . .	,,	2	30
Beef, with salt only, boiled,	,,	2	45
Beef, fresh, lean, roasted, .	,,	3	0
Beef-steak, broiled, . .	,,	3	0
Pork, recently salted, raw, .	,,	3	0
Pork, recently salted, stewed,	,,	3	0
Mutton, fresh, broiled, . .	,,	3	0
Mutton, fresh, boiled, . .	,,	3	0
Pork, recently salted, broiled,	,,	3	15
Pork steak, broiled, . .	,,	3	15

---

* See the next chapter, DIGESTION AND INDIGESTION.

		Hour.	Min.
Mutton, fresh, roasted, .	requires	3	15
Beef, fresh, lean, dry, roasted,	,,	3	30
Beef, with mustard, &c., boiled,	,,	3	30
Beef, with mustard, &c., fried,	,,	4	0
Veal, fresh, broiled, . .	,,	4	0
Beef, old, hard, salted, boiled,	,,	4	15
Veal, fresh, fried, . .	,,	4	30
Pork, fat and lean, roasted, .	,,	5	15

As may be expected, the flesh of different parts has different qualities: the breast of birds, with its pectoral muscles, which move the wings, is tenderer than the legs; but the flesh of the legs, when the birds are young, is more juicy and savoury than that of the wings; and in the woodcock, old or young, the legs are always preferred, while in the partridge epicures select the wings.

The flesh of game is richer in osmazome than that of domestic birds; and when the bird has been kept till it is "high," it has—especially in the back—an aromatic bitter flavour very acceptable to epicures, but very nauseous to unsophisticated palates.

The flesh of all waterfowl, especially the goose, is penetrated with fat, which often becomes rancid and "fishy:" this renders the goose so notorious an offender, that he has to be "qualified" by a little brandy, euphuistically styled "Latin for goose." Dr Beaumont found no difference between the digestibility (in the stomach) of roast goose and roast turkey, both requiring two hours and a half; but it should be observed that the fats are not digested at all in the stomach, and it is on the fats that the real digestive difference between goose and turkey depends. Turkey, roasted, requires two hours and a half for digestion; fowl, roasted, four hours, and ducks the same.

Besides the meat (muscle), the brains, livers, kidneys, and sweetbread of various animals are eaten. On account of the fat and oil contained in brain and liver, they are unsuitable for delicate stomachs, especially when fried. Kidneys are very tough, and difficult of digestion. Sweetbread forms a favourite food with convalescents, when plainly dressed; its composition in 100 parts is as follows—

Albumen,	14.00
Osmazome,	1.65
Gelatine,	6.00
Animal fat,	0.30
Margaric acid,*	0.05
Fibrine,	8.00
Water,	70.00
	100.00

An excellent food, too much neglected, is Tripe, which is simply the stomachs of ruminant animals. As it contains a large proportion of albumen and fibrine, and requires not more than one hour for its digestion in the stomach, we see the justification of the practice popular in many families, of having Tripe for supper. There is no nightmare in it.

---

* Margaric acid is one of the fatty acids, and is produced from margarin, a pearly fat found in olive oil, goose grease and human fat.

2. *Horse-flesh.*—A Frenchman was one day blandly remonstrating against the supercilious scorn expressed by Englishmen for the beef of France, which he, for his part, did not find so inferior to that of England. "I have been two times in England," he remarked, "but I nevère find the bif so supérieur to ours. I find it vary conveenient that they bring it you on leetle pieces of stick, for one penny; but I do not find the bif supérieur." On hearing this, the Englishman, red with astonishment, exclaimed, "Good God, sir! you have been eating cat's meat."

It is very true, he *had* been eating cat's meat; but had he not at the same time been eating meat as succulent, savoury, and wholesome as the marbled beef of which the Briton is so proud?

Let the resonant shouts of laughter subside a little, and while you are wiping the tears from your eyes, listen to the very serious exposition we shall make of the agreeable and nutritive qualities of horse-flesh. We are not going to press into the service of our argument the immense mass of evidence collected by M. Isidore Geoffroy St Hilaire,* respecting the tribes and nations which habitually dine off horses; nor will we lay much stress on the fact, that in the Jardin des Plantes the carnivora are habitually fed on horse-flesh, which keeps them healthy in spite of many unfavourable conditions. The sceptic might not unreasonably ask whether our digestive power be *quite* as good as that of the lion; and he would remark that the condor is known to devour, with relish, food which Mr Brown would sturdily refuse. Unhappily no dietetic rules for men can be deduced from condors and lions. We must rely on the experience of human stomachs.

---

* *Lettres sur les Substances Alimentaires, et particulièrement sur la Viande de Cheval.* 1856.

Nor is this experience wanting. Without alluding to the rumours which attribute to the Paris restaurateurs a liberal employment of horse-flesh among their *filets de bœuf*, M. St Hilaire collects an imposing mass of evidence to show that horses have been eaten in abundance without suspicion, and without evil consequences.

Huzard, the celebrated veterinary surgeon, records, that during the Revolution the population of Paris was fed for six months on horse-flesh. It is true, that when the beef was known to be that of horses, some complaints were made; but in spite of the strong prejudices, and the terrors such a discovery raised, no single case of illness was attributable to this food.

Larrey, the great army-surgeon, declares, that on very many occasions during the campaigns, he administered horse-flesh to the soldiers; and what is more, he administered it to the sick in the hospitals. Instead of finding it injurious, he found that it powerfully contributed to their convalescence, and drove away a scorbutic epidemic. Other testimony is cited, and M. St Hilaire feels himself abundantly authorised to declare that horse-flesh is as wholesome and nutritious as ox-flesh.

Is horse-flesh as palatable as it is wholesome? Little will it avail to recount how there are tribes of hippophagists, or how soldiers during a campaign, and citizens during a siege, have freely eaten of the *filet de cheval:* under such extremities an old shoe has not been despised—nevertheless, *that* is not generally considered a toothsome morsel.

Feeling the necessity of having this point definitively settled, the advocates of horse-flesh have given banquets, both in Germany and France, at which the comparative merits of horses, cows, and oxen were to be appreciated. In 1835 the Prefect of Police chose a commission of eminent men to inquire into the quality of the flesh taken from horses which had died, or had been recently killed, in Paris and its environs. These commissioners all shared the general prejudice; yet in their report they avowed that "we cannot but admit this meat to be very good and very savoury; several members of the commission have eaten it, and could not detect any sensible difference between it and beef." In 1841, horse-flesh was openly adopted at Ochsenhausen (what irony in this name!) and Würtemberg, at both of which places it continues to be publicly sold, under the surveillance of the police; and five or six horses are weekly brought to market. In 1842, a banquet, at which a hundred and fifty persons assisted, inaugurated its public use at Königsbaden, near Stuttgard. In 1846 the police of Baden authorised its public sale; and Schaffhausen followed the example. In 1847, Weimar and Detmold witnessed public banquets of the hippophagists, which went off with *éclat;* in Karlsbad and its environs the new beef came into general use; and at Zittau two hundred horses are eaten annually. The innovation gained ground rapidly, and the public sale of horse-flesh is now general in Austria, Bohemia, Saxony, Hanover, Switzerland, and Belgium. In 1853, Berlin counted no less than five slaughter-houses, where three hundred and fifty horses were sold. In Vienna, during the same year, there was a riot to prevent one of these banquets; yet, in 1854, such progress had been made in public opinion that thirty-two thousand pounds' weight were sold in a fortnight, and now at least ten thousand of the inhabitants are hippophagists. A large quantity is also sold at the Lake of Constance, as I learned in 1858; and I *suspect* that I ate thereof on board the steamer.

These facts are very striking. When we consider, on the one hand, how strong is prejudice, and, on the other, how unreasoning the stomach, we must admit that horse-flesh could only gain acceptance in virtue of its positive excellence. Nor will it suffice to meet these facts with a sarcasm on German beef, in comparison with which horse-flesh may be supposed to hold no dishonourable rank: we have the testimony of men accustomed to the *Café de Paris* and *Philippe's,* invited expressly to pronounce judgment, and proved, on trial, incapable of distinguishing horse-beef from ox-beef.

M. Renault, the director of the great veterinary school at Alfort, had a horse brought to the establishment with an incurable paralysis. It was killed; and three days afterwards, on the 1st December 1855, eleven guests were invited to dine off it: they were physicians, journalists, veterinary surgeons, and *employés* of the Government. Side by side were dishes prepared by the same cook, in precisely similar manner, consisting of similar parts of the meat from this horse, and from an ox of good quality. The horse-soup was flanked by an ox-soup—the *bouilli* of horse by a *bouilli* of beef—the fillet of roast-beef by a fillet of roast-horse. The guests *unanimously* pronounced in favour of the horse-soup; the *bouilli*, on the contrary, they thought inferior to that of the ox, though superior to ordinary beef, decidedly so to cow-beef. The roast fillet, again, seemed to them very decidedly in favour of the horse.

Similar experiments have been subsequently repeated in Paris and the provinces, under varying conditions: the guests have sometimes been informed what they were going to eat; sometimes they have been totally unsuspecting; and sometimes they have been simply told that they were going to eat something quite novel. Yet in every case the result has been the same.

It is on this evidence that M. St Hilaire calls upon the French people to turn their serious attention to the immense mass of excellent animal food which lies within their reach, and which they annually suffer to waste, merely because of an absurd prejudice. Difficult as it may be to overcome a prejudice, no array of ignorance can prevent the establishment of a truth which is at once easily demonstrable and immediately beneficial. Prejudice may reject horse-flesh, as it long rejected tea and potatoes, the latter of which, Montaigne tells us, excited *l'estonnement et le dégoût,* but has nevertheless become European food.

If horses are eaten, why not donkeys? The Greeks ate donkeys, and we must suppose they had their reasons for it. Has any modern stomach been courageous enough to try?

Yes, the experiment has at least been made once. Dr John Beddoe of Clifton sends me the following statement:—"Several years ago, I entertained six or eight medical students with a dinner, at which the *pièce de resistance* was nothing else than the hind-leg of a donkey which had been sacrificed to a physiological experiment. One or two of my guests were in the secret: to the others I represented the meat to be part of a fawn. They all partook of it, and 'even asked for more.' In flavour and appearance it most resembled mutton; but though young it was far from tender, and I did not care to repeat the experiment, to which I had been instigated partly by a passage in an Arabian tale, in which one of two gastronomic disputants, in reply to a commendation of a shoulder of lamb, is made to say, 'You know nothing: what say you to the neck of a young ass carefully roasted?'" Although Dr Beddoe does not report very favourably of the tenderness, his guests found the meat sufficiently appetising, since they "asked for more." Besides, the animal may have been too fresh; another day or two might have given it the requisite tenderness. The point is worth investigating; for if the horse and donkey can be introduced among our meats, thousands who now rarely touch animal food may be supplied. So many horses are killed by accident, or killed because they are lame or vicious, that the supply would be enormous, without any necessity for killing horses expressly.

A new and noble kind of meat has recently been suggested by Prof. Owen, whose account of the flavour and capabilities of the Eland will doubtless induce noblemen to introduce that animal into their parks.

3. *Fish* is largely eaten by all classes, and is certainly nutritious. Great differences are noticeable in the different kinds. Many kinds have large quantities of oil—as the eel, salmon, herring, pilchard, and sprat; and these are therefore the least digestible. The oil is most abundant in the "thin" parts of salmon, which are consequently preferred by epicures. After spawning, the quality is very inferior. In the cod, whiting, haddock, plaice, flounder, and turbot, there is no oil except in their livers, so that these are easily digested, especially if they are not eaten with quantities of lobster or shrimp sauce, agreeable adjuncts very apt to exact large compensation from the delicate in the shape of acidity and flatulence.

Frying, of course, renders fish less digestible than boiling or broiling; and those whose digestions are delicate should avoid the skin of fried fish. They should also avoid dried, smoked, salted, and pickled fish; crabs, lobsters, prawns, and shrimps. The oyster is most digestible when raw, least so when stewed. Dr Beaumont found the raw oyster took 2 hours 55 minutes to digest, the roasted oyster 3.15, and the stewed 3.30. What is called "scalloping" gives oysters a delicious flavour, but the heat coagulates the albumen and hardens the fibrine; besides, the effect of heat on the butter in which they are cooked renders it very unfit for the delicate stomach.

Respecting the nutritive quality of fish, opinions are divided. Let us hear old Leeuwenhoek. "It is the opinion of many medical persons," he says, "that various disorders in the human frame are caused by acid in the stomach, which coagulates the juices (!); and some condemn the use of acids, and also of fish, as articles of food. But to these opinions I cannot subscribe; for at a town in my neighbourhood, where the people get their living by fishing, and feed principally on fish, especially when they are on the sea, the men are very robust and healthy even to a great age; and with respect to myself, I have experienced that when my habit of body has been indisposed, I have been greatly refreshed by eating fish with sauce composed of a mixture of butter and vinegar, and I never found acid sauces disagree with me. It is also my opinion that a fish diet is more wholesome than flesh, particularly to those persons who do not use much exercise, because fish is more easily comminuted and digested in the stomach and bowels than flesh."*

---

* LEEUWENHOEK: *Select Works,* i. 154.

But while fishermen are robust on a fish diet, it is notorious that those accustomed to meat find a certain debility follow the adoption of an exclusively fish diet —during Lent, for instance; and jockeys, when "wasting" themselves at Newmarket, take fish in lieu of meat. Lehmann cites the analyses of Schlossberger, which show "that the amount of nitrogen in muscular fibre is throughout the animal kingdom essentially similar. The flesh of fish contains the same amount as that of the higher animals; oysters, on the contrary, instead of containing more, as common experience would lead us to conjecture, actually contain less." * There is, however, as we have seen, a remarkable difference between being rich in nitrogen, and being good food. One reason why fish is less nutritious than flesh, in spite of the similarity in their composition, is said to be the absence of the osmazome which gives flavour to flesh.

One of the popular notions entertained even by some medical men is, that eating fish increases fertility, and that the fish-eating tribes are unusually prolific. We need not pause to refute the physiological arguments on which this opinion is founded, as the fact asserted, of fish-eating tribes being very prolific, is itself a fiction. Dr Pereira remarks:—

"There is, I think, sufficient evidence to prove that the ichthyophagous people are not more prolific than others. In Greenland and among the Esquimaux, says Foster, where the natives live chiefly upon fish, seals,

---

* Lehmann: *Physiol. Chemie,* iii. 351.

and oily animal substances, the women seldom bear children oftener than three or four times: five or six births are reckoned a very extraordinary instance. The Pesserais whom we saw had not above two or three children belonging to each family, though their common food consisted of mussels, fish, and seal-flesh. The New Zealanders absolutely feed on fish, and yet no more than three or four children were found in the most prolific families." *

4. *Eggs* are very nutritious, especially when poached or lightly boiled; when boiled hard, or fried in butter, they are difficult of digestion; and the same may be said of omelettes, pancakes, and fritters.

But here, as indeed in all other cases, only general empirical rules can be laid down—rules which individual experience must rectify or confirm. There are persons who cannot eat the white of egg; there are persons who cannot eat the yolk; and there are others who cannot eat egg in any shape whatever. To some persons of delicate digestion, eggs are found very suitable; while to others, whose digestion is generally good, they are hurtful. "In short," says Leeuwenhoek, "we can much better judge for ourselves as to what agrees or disagrees with us, than pretend to advise other people what is good diet, or the contrary." † Experience, enlightened by vigilant good-sense, can alone determine such questions for each person. It is idle to assure a man who finds eggs disagree with him, that "they are really very wholesome;" and not less idle to warn him against eggs, or anything else, which his experience pronounces beneficial. The blissful being who knows not, except by rumour, what is the difference between digestible and indigestible, may smile at Science and its exhortations; the miserable being whose stomach painfully obtrudes itself upon his consciousness by importunities not to be evaded, and by clamours not to be outargued, may gather some guiding light from general rules, and thus by vigilance arrive at positive results for himself.

---

* PEREIRA: *On Diet*, p. 282.

† LEEUWENHOEK: *Select Works*, i. 158.

5. *Pastry.*—There are two kinds of pie-crust, called "puff" and "short" paste; of these, the latter is the most digestible, because the butter is thoroughly mingled with the dough, and is by this means in that state of minute subdivision which, when treating of Fats and Oils, we saw to be necessary for its proper digestion; morever, the starch is also thus more equally distributed.

In puff pastry this is not the case: the dough forms itself into thin and solid layers. "All pastry," according to Dr Paris, "is an abomination. I verily believe that one-half of the cases of indigestion which occur after dinner-parties may be traced to this cause."

A hard sentence, this, on juveniles and pastry-lovers; but in mitigation, one may suggest that the offences of pastry lie less in its own sinful composition, than in the fact of its succeeding a chaos of meats, made-dishes, and mingled vintages. The gentleman who was found reeling forlorn and helpless against the railings, on his way home after dinner with a friend, hiccuped energetic denunciations against that "knuckle of ham" which had taken the steadiness from his legs and the singleness from visual objects; in like manner the tart, which is innocent when following a simple joint, may become as guilty as the knuckle of ham, at the rear of an elaborate dinner. We are all apt to over-eat ourselves, and then we throw the blame of our imprudence on some article of food not in itself more objectionable than the others.

6. *Vegetables.*—The immense variety of vegetable food cannot, of course, even be indicated in so rapid a survey as this. A volume might be written on the bread-plants alone. The tropical: rice, plantain, yam, sweet-potato, chayote, arrow-root, cassava, bread-fruit, sago, cocoa-nut, taro, and date; and the extra-tropical: wheat, rye, barley, oats, buckwheat, and potatoes; with maize, which is common to both regions—these alone support millions of human beings, and are justly named "the staff of life."

The tropical plants yield more than the others; wheat yields on an average only five or six fold in northern Europe, and eight or ten fold in southern Europe; but rice yields a hundred-fold. The plantain yields 133 times as much food as wheat on the same area. With a small garden round his hut the peasant can support his family. And how easy is subsistence in the Asiatic Archipelago, where sago grows wild in the woods, and a man goes into the forest to cut his bread, as we to cut our firewood. He fells the tree, divides it into several pieces, scrapes the pith out, mixes it with water, strains it, and there is sago-meal ready for use.*

The bread-countries have been thus geographically indicated by Schouw:—"The *bread-line* extends furthest north in Scandinavia, for in Finmark we meet —only within the fiords, it is true—with barley and potatoes up to 70° N. latitude; from here it sinks both to the east and west. It is well known that neither Iceland nor Greenland possess bread-plants, although the south coast of the former lies in $63\frac{1}{2}°$, and that of the latter in 60° N. latitude; and that in the Feröe Islands, although lying between $61\frac{1}{2}°$ and $62\frac{1}{2}°$, there exists but an inconsiderable cultivation of barley. On the east side of North America the bread-line sinks still further to the south, for Labrador and Newfoundland have no bread-plants, and the limit can scarcely be put here higher than 50°, consequently much further south than in Denmark, where the plains abound in corn. It extends a little further north on the western coast of North America, which, as is well known, possesses a warmer climate than on the east side. The few data which we find here, render the determination of the north limit rather uncertain; it can scarcely be placed higher than 57° or 58°. Turning from Scandinavia towards the east, we find a depression of the bread-line even in European Russia, here coming by 67° northward of Archangel. The curve is considerable in Asiatic Russia; at Ob the north limit of bread comes to 60°, at Jenesi to 58°, at Lena $57\frac{1}{2}°$, and in Kamtschatka, which has only a slight cultivation of corn in the most southern part, it sinks to 51°—thus to about the same latitude as on the east coast of North America. The bread-line has thus two polar and two equatorial curves, the former corresponding to the western, the latter to the eastern sides of the continent." *

---

* Schouw: *The Earth, Plants, and Man* (Trans.), p. 131.

Vegetarianism.—On surveying the list of nations and tribes whose food is principally, or entirely, vegetable, we are naturally led to ask what confidence is due to that party in America and England which proclaims Vegetarianism to be the proper creed for civilised men, and vegetable food the healthiest and suitablest in every way. Many years ago, I was myself a convert to this doctrine, seduced by the example and enthusiasm of Shelley; and, for the six months in which I rigidly adhered to its precepts, could find no sensible difference, except that I was able to study immediately after dinner. It soon became clear, however, that the arguments on which the doctrine rests for support would not withstand physiological scrutiny.

It is unnecessary to do more than allude to such fantastic arguments as that of Rousseau, who maintained vegetables to be our proper food, because we have two breasts, like the vegetable feeders; an argument as worthless as the counter-argument of Helvetius, that flesh is our only proper food, because we have the blind intestine short, like the flesh-feeders. The vegetarian theory is at variance with the plain indications afforded by our structure, and by the indications, no less plain, afforded by our practice. The structure of our teeth and intestinal canal points to a mixed diet of flesh and vegetable; and although the practice of millions may be to avoid flesh altogether, it is equally the practice of millions to eat it. In hot climates there seems little or no necessity for animal food; in cold climates it is imperatively demanded. In moderate climates, food is partly animal and partly vegetable. Against instinct, so manifested, it is in vain to argue; any theory of food which should run counter to it stands self-condemned.

---

* SCHOUW: *The Earth, Plants, and Man* (Trans.), p. 131.

Besides this massive evidence, we have abundant examples in individual cases to show how necessary animal food is for those who have to employ much muscular exertion. The French contractors and manufacturers who were obliged to engage English navvies and workmen, because French workmen had not the requisite strength, at last resolved to try the effect of a more liberal meat diet; and by giving the Frenchman as ample a ration of meat as that eaten by the Englishman, the difference was soon reduced to a mere nothing. It is worth noting that the popular idea of one Englishman being equal to three Frenchmen, was found by contractors to be tolerably accurate, one Englishman really doing the work of two and a half men; and M. Payen remarks that the consumption of mutton in England is three times as much as that in France, in proportion to the inhabitants.*

It is a fact of very great importance that the chemical constitution of the Blood is notably altered by an exclusively vegetable diet. Verdeil discovered that the blood of animals fed exclusively on flesh contained a quantity of phosphates, while the carbonates had disappeared; on the contrary, the same animals fed on vegetables had blood rich in carbonates, with but little of the phosphates. A dog was fed for a fortnight on flesh, and the ashes of its blood yielded as much as 12 per cent of phosphoric acid, combined with alkalies. The same dog fed on bread and potatoes showed only 9 per cent; and if it could have been fed on green vegetables, there would not have been more than 2 or 3 per cent—as in the blood of sheep and oxen.*

---

* PAYEN: *Des Substances Alimentaires*, p. 8.

There are many conclusions to be drawn from this fact. One only need be hinted at here. Those who have any predisposition to the terrible disease called "the stone" should abstain as much as possible from animal diet, bread, and peas, since it is thence that the phosphoric acid in excess is derived, which will form the phosphate usually characteristic of the "stone." By a vegetable diet the blood is rendered alkaline; this will enable the uric acid to remain soluble; and thus, even if a stone be already formed, its progress will be arrested.

Tea, Coffee, Chocolate, Wines, and *Beers,* have been so amply and lucidly treated of by Johnston in his *Chemistry of Common Life,* that we need say nothing of them in this place, except to remark that they are all undeniably nourishing, although seemingly incapable of entering into the composition of any tissue, so that their physiological value is still a mystery.

---

* VERDEIL in *Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie,* 1849, p. 71.

There are few facts better established than that Tea and Coffee, no less than Wine and Beer, and Narcotics, *increase* the activity and power of the organism, while they *diminish* its waste. In Dr Böcker's experiments on himself, it appeared that when for seven days, consecutively, he drank only water with *insufficient* food, he daily lost 12 ounces avoirdupois, more than when, with the *same* amount of food, he drank tea. Moreover, when he took a *sufficient* quantity of food he gained weight, if tea were added. He found tea very materially diminish the amount of urea and other excretions; and it also limited the amount lost in perspiration.

In Dr Julius Lehmann's experiments on himself, with coffee, similar results were reached. They are thus stated by Dr Chambers:[*]

1. That coffee produces on the organism two chief effects which it is very difficult to connect together—viz. the raising the activity of the circulating and nervous systems, and remarkably retarding the decomposition of the tissues.

2. That it is the reciprocal modifications of the empyreumatic oil and caffeine contained in the bean which call forth the stimulant effects of coffee.

3. That the lessening of the changes of decomposition which this beverage produces in the body is chiefly caused by the empyreumatic oil.

---

[*] CHAMBERS: *Digestion and its Derangements*, p. 249.

"What an important effect this is!" exclaims Dr Chambers. "The tea and coffee drinker may have less to eat and yet lose less weight—wear his body out less—than the water-drinker. At a comparatively small expense he may save some of the costly parts of his diet, those nitrogenised solids that entail so much thought, labour, and anxiety to obtain." The same is true of Alcohol, and all the Narcotics, as is irresistibly proved by Von Bibra in his comprehensive work.*

Let me call attention to a paradox which physiologists have seemingly overlooked, namely, that the physiological canon of "all activity being dependent on waste of tissue," seems here contradicted by a class of substances which notoriously increase the activity, and demonstrably decrease the waste. It is held that every evolution of force is produced by some chemical change; and every change tends towards final decomposition. In a vast variety of cases this is demonstrable. In the cases now under consideration nothing of the kind is apparent—the tissues are more active, and the waste is less. And what makes the paradox more striking is the fact that none of these substances enter, as such, into the composition of the tissues. They must be supposed, therefore, to act upon them; but how can they act upon them, evolving force, without producing decomposition?

I instituted some experiments with a view of determining, if possible, what the precise action was, and whether it was similar in each case. The fact that we ordinarily employ alcohol to *preserve* animal preparations—to protect them from that decomposition which would otherwise ensue if the substances were left to themselves—suggested the idea that when we drink alcohol, in wine, beer, or spirits, the action on our tissues may be of the same nature, only less energetic. If a *temporary* suspension of the inevitable process of decomposition were effected by alcoholic drinks—if the alcohol acted on the living as on the dead tissue, and arrested its molecular changes—we should then clearly understand how it is that alcoholic drinks diminish waste, how they are the "savings-bank of the tissues," and how they lessen the quantity of food which is needful. But the mystery would still remain how such an arrest of change could be coincident with an increase of power.

---

* Von Bibra: *Die narkotischen Genussmittel und der Mensch.* Compare also Johnston: *Chemistry of Common Life: "The Narcotics we indulge in."*

The point I endeavoured to establish was this: Are the tissues *preserved* by decoctions of Tea, Tobacco, and Coffee, in the same way as by Alcohol? The experiments gave a decided negative; and I am now disposed to doubt whether the action of Alcohol on the living tissues, when taken in the highly-diluted form of wine or spirits, has any notable resemblance to that which concentrated Alcohol has on dead tissue. Consequently, the mode of action of tea, coffee, and narcotics has yet to be explained; and when explained, there will still remain the paradox of increased activity with diminished waste.

We have thus surveyed the great varieties of Food, and have seen how far Science is from any accurate data respecting the nutritive value of separate substances. It is doubtful whether this last requisite will ever be attained, owing to the complexity of the problem, and the shifting nature of the data.

The nutritive value of any substance is necessarily dependent on the relation of that substance to the organism: but that relation cannot be constant, because the organism itself is frequently changing. Moreover, a substance which under ordinary circumstances will be very nutritious, suddenly fails to nourish, because some other substance is present, or some other substance is absent. Whenever the animal is a various feeder, variety in food becomes indispensable. Majendie found that rabbits could not subsist longer than a fortnight if fed on a single article of their ordinary food, such as carrots, or cabbages, or barley; and Ernest Burdach made the following experiment: Taking three rabbits not quite full-grown, but all three from the same litter, and as nearly alike as possible in size, strength, colour, form, and sex; to the one he gave nothing but water and potatoes, which were furnished in abundance; 'it ate seven ounces on the first day, six on the second, and gradually less and less; its weight, which on the seventh day was 161 *gros*, was reduced by the thirteenth day to 93 *gros*, when it died completely exhausted. The second was fed in the same way with barley; it ate 20 *gros* the first day, 14 the third, and

so on less and less; in the fourth week it expired. The third rabbit was fed on alternate days with potatoes and barley, and its weight increased till the nineteenth day; and as its weight then remained stationary, in the third week both potatoes and barley were given together, upon which the weight continued to increase, and the animal retained its original vivacity."

VI. The Quantity of Food.—It has long been a question what quantity of Food is requisite for the proper sustainment and repair of the organism. Like most other questions of the kind, it can be answered only in a rough manner, precision being impossible. The differences of individual organisms, and the different conditions of these organisms, must always interfere with any attempt at accurate estimates. The same man must necessarily require more food when in activity than when in repose; in cold climates more than in hot climates; and although we may strike an average which shall be accurate enough as a matter of figures, of what use can an average be in Physiology? *The man to be fed is not an average.* A hundred men will consume an amount of food which may be accurately divided into a hundred parts; but these figures give us no real clue to the quantity needed by each individual; and rations founded on such estimates must necessarily be imperfect, one man receiving more, another less, than is required.

Individual experience can only be valid for the individual. Valentin, from experiments on himself, found that his daily consumption was rather more

than six pounds of solid and liquid food; but Cornaro for fifty-eight years took no more than 12 ounces of solid food, and 14 ounces of light wine. Here are two individual experiences widely discrepant. It is clear to the physiologist that the very small amount of solid food taken by Cornaro was partly compensated by the nutritive value of the wine; and partly by the fact that his moderate activity caused a less demand than is usual among men; but even when due allowance is made for such elements, we are brought no nearer to a correct estimate, because we have not yet determined, and perhaps never shall determine, the nutritive value of the different articles of food; so that those elaborate arrays of *weights*, which many chemists and physiologists are fond of producing as evidence, are vitiated by the initial fallacy of supposing that vital phenomena can be satisfactorily reducible to arithmetical calculation.

We are tempted to pause here for a moment to notice one of the most singular of these misleading applications of arithmetic to Life. Both phrenologists and their antagonists constantly invoke the weight of the brains of different men and animals, as if they believed in an exact correspondence between so many ounces of nervous matter, and so much cerebral activity. Nevertheless they, at the same time, maintain that size is *not* the measure of power, unless "all other things are equal." Now the truth is that "all other things" never *are* equal, in two different brains.* Nervous tissue is not like so much salt or chalk, *defi-*

---

* See *Biographical Hist. of Philosophy*, 1857, p

so on less and less; in the fourth week it expired. The third rabbit was fed on alternate days with potatoes and barley, and its weight increased till the nineteenth day; and as its weight then remained stationary, in the third week both potatoes and barley were given together, upon which the weight continued to increase, and the animal retained its original vivacity."

VI. THE QUANTITY OF FOOD.—It has long been a question what quantity of Food is requisite for the proper sustainment and repair of the organism. Like most other questions of the kind, it can be answered only in a rough manner, precision being impossible. The differences of individual organisms, and the different conditions of these organisms, must always interfere with any attempt at accurate estimates. The same man must necessarily require more food when in activity than when in repose; in cold climates more than in hot climates; and although we may strike an average which shall be accurate enough as a matter of figures, of what use can an average be in Physiology? *The man to be fed is not an average.* A hundred men will consume an amount of food which may be accurately divided into a hundred parts; but these figures give us no real clue to the quantity needed by each individual; and rations founded on such estimates must necessarily be imperfect, one man receiving more, another less, than is required.

Individual experience can only be valid for the individual. Valentin, from experiments on himself und that his daily consumption was rather mor than six pounds of solid and liquid food; but Cornaro for fifty-eight years took no more than 12 ounces of solid food, and 14 ounces of light wine. Here are two individual experiences widely discrepant. It is clear to the physiologist that the very small amount of solid food taken by Cornaro was partly compensated by the nutritive value of the wine; and partly by the fact that his moderate activity caused a less demand than is usual among men; but even when due allowance is made for such elements, we are brought no nearer to a correct estimate, because we have not yet determined, and perhaps never shall determine, the nutritive value of the different articles of food; so that those elaborate rrays of *weights*, which many chemists and physiolo-ists are fond of producing as evidence, are vitiated y the initial fallacy of supposing that vital pheno-ena can be satisfactorily reducible to arithmetical lculation.

We are tempted to pause here for a moment to tice one of the most singular of these misleading plications of arithmetic to Life. Both phrenologists d their antagonists constantly invoke the weight of brains of different men and animals, as if they ved in an exact correspondence between so many s of nervous matter, and so much cerebral acti-Nevertheless they, at the same time, maintain e is *not* the measure of power, unless "all ngs are equal." Now the truth is that "all gs" never *are* equal, in two different brains.* ssue is not like so much salt or chalk, defi-

---

Biographical Hist. of Philosophy, 1857, p. 637.

so on less and less; in the fourth week it expired. The third rabbit was fed on alternate days with potatoes and barley, and its weight increased till the nineteenth day; and as its weight then remained stationary, in the third week both potatoes and barley were given together, upon which the weight continued to increase, and the animal retained its original vivacity."

VI. THE QUANTITY OF FOOD.—It has long been a question what quantity of Food is requisite for the proper sustainment and repair of the organism. Like most other questions of the kind, it can be answered only in a rough manner, precision being impossible. The differences of individual organisms, and the different conditions of these organisms, must always interfere with any attempt at accurate estimates. The same man must necessarily require more food when in activity than when in repose; in cold climates more than in hot climates; and although we may strike an average which shall be accurate enough as a matter of figures, of what use can an average be in Physiology? *The man to be fed is not an average.* A hundred men will consume an amount of food which may be accurately divided into a hundred parts; but these figures give us no real clue to the quantity needed by each individual; and rations founded on such estimates must necessarily be imperfect, one man receiving more, another less, than is required.

Individual experience can only be valid for the individual. Valentin, from experiments on himself, found that his daily consumption was rather more

than six pounds of solid and liquid food; but Cornaro for fifty-eight years took no more than 12 ounces of solid food, and 14 ounces of light wine. Here are two individual experiences widely discrepant. It is clear to the physiologist that the very small amount of solid food taken by Cornaro was partly compensated by the nutritive value of the wine; and partly by the fact that his moderate activity caused a less demand than is usual among men; but even when due allowance is made for such elements, we are brought no nearer to a correct estimate, because we have not yet determined, and perhaps never shall determine, the nutritive value of the different articles of food; so that those elaborate arrays of *weights*, which many chemists and physiologists are fond of producing as evidence, are vitiated by the initial fallacy of supposing that vital phenomena can be satisfactorily reducible to arithmetical calculation.

We are tempted to pause here for a moment to notice one of the most singular of these misleading applications of arithmetic to Life. Both phrenologists and their antagonists constantly invoke the weight of the brains of different men and animals, as if they believed in an exact correspondence between so many ounces of nervous matter, and so much cerebral activity. Nevertheless they, at the same time, maintain that size is *not* the measure of power, unless "all other things are equal." Now the truth is that "all other things" never *are* equal, in two different brains.* Nervous tissue is not like so much salt or chalk, *defi-*

---

* See *Biographical Hist. of Philosophy*, 1857, p. 637.

so on less and less; in the fourth week it expired. The third rabbit was fed on alternate days with potatoes and barley, and its weight increased till the nineteenth day; and as its weight then remained stationary, in the third week both potatoes and barley were given together, upon which the weight continued to increase, and the animal retained its original vivacity."

VI. THE QUANTITY OF FOOD.—It has long been a question what quantity of Food is requisite for the proper sustainment and repair of the organism. Like most other questions of the kind, it can be answered only in a rough manner, precision being impossible. The differences of individual organisms, and the different conditions of these organisms, must always interfere with any attempt at accurate estimates. The same man must necessarily require more food when in activity than when in repose; in cold climates more than in hot climates; and although we may strike an average which shall be accurate enough as a matter of figures, of what use can an average be in Physiology? *The man to be fed is not an average.* A hundred men will consume an amount of food which may be accurately divided into a hundred parts; but these figures give us no real clue to the quantity needed by each individual; and rations founded on such estimates must necessarily be imperfect, one man receiving more, another less, than is required.

Individual experience can only be valid for the individual. Valentin, from experiments on himself, found that his daily consumption was rather more

than six pounds of solid and liquid food; but Cornaro for fifty-eight years took no more than 12 ounces of solid food, and 14 ounces of light wine. Here are two individual experiences widely discrepant. It is clear to the physiologist that the very small amount of solid food taken by Cornaro was partly compensated by the nutritive value of the wine; and partly by the fact that his moderate activity caused a less demand than is usual among men; but even when due allowance is made for such elements, we are brought no nearer to a correct estimate, because we have not yet determined, and perhaps never shall determine, the nutritive value of the different articles of food; so that those elaborate arrays of *weights*, which many chemists and physiologists are fond of producing as evidence, are vitiated by the initial fallacy of supposing that vital phenomena can be satisfactorily reducible to arithmetical calculation.

We are tempted to pause here for a moment to notice one of the most singular of these misleading applications of arithmetic to Life. Both phrenologists and their antagonists constantly invoke the weight of the brains of different men and animals, as if they believed in an exact correspondence between so many ounces of nervous matter, and so much cerebral activity. Nevertheless they, at the same time, maintain that size is *not* the measure of power, unless "all other things are equal." Now the truth is that "all other things" never *are* equal, in two different brains.* Nervous tissue is not like so much salt or chalk, *defi-*

---

* See *Biographical Hist. of Philosophy*, 1857, p. 637.

nite in composition, presenting everywhere precisely the same quantities of water, phosphorus, sulphur, &c.; nor is it everywhere precisely similar in *development;* the proportions and directions of its fibres differing in different brains, and at different ages of the same brain. Yet it is on these two qualities, of *composition* and *development,* that the functions of the brain will greatly depend for their relative intensity; and these are not ascertainable by measurement, or by weight. To weigh the brains of two men, with a view of determining what the comparative intellectual power of the two men really was, is as chimerical as to weigh two men in the scales, with a view of ascertaining what amount of muscular energy, dexterity, and endurance each possesses. Indeed, the error never could have gained acceptance for a moment, if a true conception of biological philosophy had been prevalent, because such a conception would have repudiated the attempt to explain vital or psychological phenomena by the method effective only in Physics.

Quitting these estimates, and interrogating experience, we find the most singular and inexplicable differences in the quantities of food which individuals require, and in the quantities which they will consume if permitted.

As a general rule, more is eaten in cold climates than in hot climates; but it is by no means clear to me that the reason of this is the one advanced by Liebig when he says, "Our clothing is merely an equivalent for a certain amount of food; the more warmly we are clad, the less urgent becomes the appetite for food, because the loss of heat by cooling, and consequently the amount of heat to be supplied by food, is diminished." The relation between cold and food is more complex than that; and when Liebig refers to the gluttony of the Samoyedes, he overlooks the gluttony of the Hottentots, which is quite as remarkable. "If," he says, "we were to go naked like certain savage tribes, or if in hunting and fishing we were exposed to the same degrees of cold as the Samoyedes, we should be able with ease to consume half of a calf, and perhaps a dozen of tallow candles into the bargain, daily, as warmly-clad travellers have related with astonishment of these people. We should then also be able to take the same quantity of brandy or train-oil without bad effects, because the carbon and hydrogen of these substances would only suffice to keep up the equilibrium between the external temperature and that of our bodies."

This sounds very plausible as long as we confine our attention to Samoyedes, but it is rendered questionable by the statement, recorded by Barrow in his *Travels in Southern Africa*, that the Hottentots are the greatest gluttons on the face of the earth. Ten Hottentots ate a middling-sized ox in three days; and three Bosjesmans had a sheep given them about five in the evening, which was entirely consumed before noon of the following day. "They continued to eat all night, without sleep and without intermission, [illegible] finished the whole animal. After this [illegible] bellies were distended to such a degree that they looked less like human beings than before."

The inhabitants of the Alpine regions of Lapland and of Norway are not remarkable for their voracity, nor are the Icelanders: a sufficient proof that mere temperature is not the sole cause of *excessive* eating, since such excess is sometimes observable in hot climates, and not always observable in cold climates.

Although Liebig's statement cannot be accepted, being indeed only one of the conclusions deduced from his theory of respiratory food, there is ample evidence to show that, without referring excessive gluttony to cold, we are justified in referring an increase of appetite to cold; and the increase is perfectly intelligible: more exercise must be taken in cold weather to develop the necessary amount of animal heat, more tissue must be wasted, and consequently more supply is needed for repair. "He who is well fed," says Sir John Ross, "resists cold better than the man who is stinted; while starvation from cold follows but too soon a starvation in food." The same writer thinks, that not only should voyagers to the polar regions take more food than usual, but "it would be very desirable indeed if the men could acquire the taste for Greenland food, since all experience has shown that the large use of oil and fat meats is the true ecret of life in these countries, and that the natives canot subsist without it, becoming diseased, and dying, ith a more meagre diet."

The accounts which travellers give of the quantity of food which can be consumed are extraordinary. Sir John Ross estimates that an Esquimaux will eat perhaps twenty pounds of flesh and oil daily. Compare this with Valentin's six pounds, or with Cornaro's twelve ounces of solids and fourteen ounces of wine !

Captain Parry tried, as a matter of curiosity, how much an Esquimaux lad, who was scarcely full grown, would consume if left to himself. The following articles were weighed before being given. He was twenty hours getting through them, and certainly did not consider the quantity extraordinary :

	Lb.	Oz.
Sea-horse flesh hard frozen, .	4	4
" " boiled, . .	4	4
Bread and bread-dust, .	1	12
	10	4

To this must be added one and a quarter pint of rich gravy-soup, three wine-glasses of raw spirits, one tumbler of strong grog, and one gallon one pint of water.

Captain Cochrane, in his *Journey through Russia and Siberian Tartary*, relates that the Admiral Saritcheff was informed that one of the Yakuti ate in four-and-twenty hours the hind-quarter of a large ox, twenty pounds of fat, and a proportionate quantity of melted butter for his drink. To test the truth of this statement, the admiral gave him a thick porridge of rice boiled down with three pounds of butter, weighing together twenty-eight pounds ; and although the glutton had already breakfasted, he sat down to it with great eagerness, and consumed the whole without stirring from the spot. Captain Cochrane also states that he has seen three Yakutis devour a reindeer at a meal; and a calf weighing about two hundred pounds is not too much for a meal of five of these gluttons.*

These facts are curious, but of course they throw no light on the question, how much food an individual requires to keep himself alive and active. Nor, indeed, has any method yet been devised which could elucidate that point. We can never feel confident that the quantity taken is not somewhat more, or somewhat less, than would really be advantageous. If a man is active on six pounds daily, he might be perhaps stronger on six and a half; and if six and a half should prove the precise amount which kept his weight unaltered, it would only do so under precisely similar conditions; and we know that on different days he will waste different quantities of tissue.

Some caterpillars daily eat double their weight in food; a cow eats 46 lb. daily; and a mouse eats eight times as much, in proportion to its own weight, as is eaten by a man. But when such facts are cited, we must bear in mind the enormous differences in the nature of the foods thus weighed, their relative amounts of water and indigestible material. The same caution is requisite in speaking of man's diet. It has been variously computed. Sanctorius estimated it at 8 lb., Rye at 5 lb. and 7 lb., Horne at 4 lb. 3 oz., and Valentin in his own person at 6 lb.

---

* PEREIRA: *On Diet*, pp. 16, 17.

Such estimates were too contradictory to afford any clue. The chemists bethought them of securing the requisite precision by taking the amount of carbonic acid expelled during the twenty-four hours as the standard of the amount of carbon necessary, and the amount of urea expelled in the same period, as the standard of nitrogen necessary. Tables were then drawn up setting forth the separate items of food requisite to supply this waste. But, apart from the profound distrust with which such chemical reasonings should be regarded, there is this separate source of distrust, that each man necessarily wastes different quantities of tissue under different conditions : if, therefore, our analysis of food correctly represented the amounts of carbon and nitrogen assimilated (which it does not), we should still have to construct a special table for each individual at each season of the year, and under varying conditions.

The question is really one of importance, when we have to apportion the rations of paupers, prisoners, soldiers, and sailors. Here we are forced to strike an average, although we know that on any average one man will necessarily have more, and another less, than is absolutely requisite ; but the impossibility of arranging matters otherwise, unless food be so abundant that it may be left to the discretion of each to eat whatever amount he pleases, forces the adoption of some standard which experience rectifies on the whole. Dr Pereira has furnished several dietaries adopted for masses of men, and from these the following is taken.

The scale of diet in the Royal Navy is thus given in the Regulations :—

"There shall be allowed to every person the following quantities of provisions :—

Bread,	1 lb.
Beer,	1 gallon.
Cocoa,	1 oz.
Sugar,	1½ oz.
Fresh meat,	1 lb.
Vegetables,	½ lb.
Tea,	¼ oz.

"When fresh meat and vegetables are not issued, there shall be allowed in lieu thereof—

Salt beef,	¾ lb.	alternately	Salt pork, ¾ lb.
Flour,	¾ lb.		Pease, ½ pint.

"And weekly, whether fresh or salt meat be issued—

Oatmeal,	½ pint.
Vinegar,	½ pint."

The daily allowance to the common soldier in Great Britain is 1 lb. of bread and ¾ lb. of meat, making together 196 oz. of solid food weekly; for this he pays a fixed sum, namely, 6d. daily, whatever may be the market price. He furnishes himself with other provisions.

As to the quantity each man should eat when unrestricted, it is to be determined by himself alone. We are notoriously apt to eat too much, and consequently waste much food, even when we do not injure ourselves. Our sensations are the surest guides, yet they do not always tell us with sufficient distinctness when we have had enough: one thing is very clear, that to force the appetite—to continue eating after the stomach has once suggested "enough"—is sure to be injurious. Hospitable hosts, no less than anxious parents, should refrain from pressing food on a reluctant appetite; it is not kindness, although kindly meant.

In closing here our survey, we must confess that it has exhibited few reliable scientific data. Indeed, to some readers it may have seemed that our efforts have been mainly revolutionary, shaking foundations which promised security, and disturbing the equanimity of scientific speculation. It is a fact that Physiology is at present in too incomplete a condition to answer the chief questions raised respecting Food; and this fact it was desirable to bring into the clear light of evidence; for on all accounts it is infinitely better that we should understand our ignorance, than that we should continue believing in hypotheses which enlighten none of the obscurities gathering round the question. It is in vain that we impatiently turn our eyes away; the darkness never disappears merely because we cease to look at it.

CHAPTER III.

DIGESTION AND INDIGESTION.

Happiness and misery connected with the Digestion—In what is science distinguished from ordinary knowledge?—The mechanical and chemical processes of Digestion: the former only exists in the simplest animals—What takes place in the mouth—Chemical action of the saliva—Its mechanical action—"Bolting" the food—Mechanical action of the stomach—The gastric juice: its composition and origin—Pepsin and acid—Action of gastric juice on various substances—It arrests putrefaction—Lesson against over-eating—Influence of fats in Digestion—Influence of saliva in increasing the gastric juice—Quantity of gastric juice—Chymification equivalent to boiling—Why the gastric juice does not act upon the stomach itself—Intestinal Digestion—The bile: quantity and composition of; how affected by fats—What is meant by biliousness?—The part played by bile—It neutralises the action of gastric juice, and assists in the absorption of fat—The pancreatic juice acts on all substances—The intestinal juice completes Digestion—Nature of chyle—The various Causes of Indigestion.

"LET good Digestion wait on appetite." Much of our happiness depends on health, and health cannot continue without digestion. Riches, and honours, and the applause of crowds, are but poor compensations for the loss of that perpetual spring of pleasure which arises from the harmonious activity of all the functions; and the most prosperous of men must envy children and animals their prosperity of digestion. The misery of mankind, springing from many causes, is intensified by Indigestion, which lessens the fortitude to endure calamities, and increases the tendency to indulge in painful forebodings. Sorrow, come whence it may, is more lightly borne, and is briefer in its visitations, when the health is vigorous; and it cannot be vigorous without good Digestion. To those whose troubled secretions predispose them to gloom and fretfulness, small evils become magnified into calamities, and evils anticipated have the force of realities.

The marvels of Nature are an inexhaustible source of reverence to the reverential mind, and among these not the least marvellous is the admirable complexity of the apparatus on which Digestion depends. No sooner do we become acquainted with this complexity than our surprise is, not that many of us, imprudent and reckless as we are, should suffer from derangements of that function; but that any of us should continue to perform it with success seven days together. The more we contemplate this mechanism, the more wondrous it appears. The more we study the process, the more intricate its problems seem. Formerly the process was thought to be very simple; increase of knowledge brought increase of doubt; and now, whoever looks closely into the results of modern investigation will be surprised to find how little the enormous labours in all directions have added to our positive knowledge. The conquests of science have consisted in explaining certain details of the process, and in analysing the whole function of Digestion into separate acts.

And here we may pause to consider in what *scientific explanation* peculiarly consists, namely, in the discovery of those intermediate facts, not obvious, which link together the obvious phenomena. Thus it is matter of vulgar observation that cattle eat grass, and that this grass returns, in the shape of manure, to effect the growth of fresh crops. The farmer, in knowing this, may be said to know as much as the philosopher; but the farmer only knows the facts which stand out, visible to all—the obvious arcs in the great orbit of life; whereas the philosopher, not content with these, seeks to detect the *hidden* facts—the intermediate links of cause and effect, which constitute the chain. In proportion to his success in discovering these intermediate links, and their order of succession, he approaches a *scientific explanation* of the vulgar *observation.* This scientific explanation has two great advantages: it ministers to the intellectual craving for knowledge, a craving which gives man his eminence; and it ministers to his practical aims, increasing his power over Nature by enabling him to foresee and to modify phenomena, and to adapt them to his uses. If he learns that silica* is an essential constituent of wheat, and that silica must be in the ground before it can enter the wheat, he learns two "intermediate facts" not at all obvious, which enable him to adapt circumstances to his needs: if the earth be deficient in silica, he will add a fresh supply.

---

* *Silica* is the chief ingredient of flint, sandstone, and many earthy minerals.

It is the same with Digestion. Every one knows that Food of various kinds is taken into the mouth, chewed, and swallowed; that it remains some time in the stomach, where it undergoes certain changes; that it then passes into the intestines, and separates into two portions, one of which nourishes the body, while the other is ejected as waste. These are the vulgar facts. But we cannot rest content with these. The intellect craves knowledge more precise, and practical wants require that the "intermediate facts" should be discovered.

THE FUNCTION OF DIGESTION.—The purpose of Digestion is to make Blood. To effect this there are many processes which, although closely connected with Digestion, are not really implied in it: such are Chewing the food, and Absorption. There are many animals which do not chew; there are many which have no absorbent vessels; yet all these digest. The function of Digestion is the function of the *alimentary canal*, which canal, or tube, extends from the mouth downwards through the whole trunk. Digestion prepares the Food for its entrance into the Blood. In those animals which chew their food we perceive that chewing aids in this preparation of the Food, and we shall therefore include it in our analysis of the process of Digestion, although, strictly speaking, it is not more digestive than cooking, or carving.

In Digestion two kinds of processes concur: the *mechanical*, such as trituration and maceration (or rubbing, and reducing to a pulp); and the *chemi-*

phenomena which take place in the mouth, he maintains that the three separate liquids which issue from the three separate glands—the *parotid,* in the cheek, the *sublingual,* under the tongue, and the *submaxillary,* in the lower jaw (see p. 230, Fig. 7, *p*, *q*, and *g*)—have distinct offices:—

1. The office of the parotid secretion is to assist chewing.

2. The office of the sublingual secretion is to assist swallowing.

3. The office of the submaxillary secretion is to assist taste.

A mixture of these three secretions with that from the mucous membrane of the mouth, constitutes Saliva; and it is this Saliva which alone exerts the slight chemical action that ever does take place; or, in other words, it is only the mucous secretion which can act chemically on starchy substances, the other three secretions separately, or mingled, being altogether without such chemical action. It is on this that Bernard founds his assertion that the Saliva has no part to play in the chemical processes of Digestion—an error in logic, I conceive; but let us see the results of experiment.

The first person who distinctly detected the chemical action of Saliva was Leuchs.* He found that in a few hours it converted a mass of cooked starch into sugar. This was subsequently confirmed by Schwann, in a celebrated paper,† wherein he argued that inasmuch as the gastric juice was incompetent to effect any change whatever in starch, the sugar found in the stomach of animals who have had none given in their food, necessarily came from the action of the Saliva on starch.

---

* BURDACH: *Traité de Physiologie,* ix. 268.

† MÜLLER'S *Archiv,* 1836, quoted by BURDACH.

It should be remarked that these observations have not the cogency they were generally supposed to have, for nothing is better established than that many animal substances have the power of transforming starch into sugar; indeed, the *alterability* of cooked starch is so great, that almost any influence suffices to change it into *dextrine* (a substance having the same elementary composition, but different *properties*), and the dextrine into *glycose* (starch-sugar).

The researches of Mialhe* gave a new aspect to the question. He established the important fact that starch paste was changed into sugar *in less than a minute* in the mouth; as the sweet taste sufficiently indicated. It is this rapidity of action which distinguishes the Saliva from other organic substances (except the pancreatic juice), and which therefore confirms the position of Leuchs and Schwann. The same result is obtained out of the organism. Mix a little starch paste with Saliva, and it will very rapidly be converted into sugar. Mialhe conceived the idea that this action was due to a particular organic agent, similar to that known as the *diastase* of vegetables—an idea too plausible not to find ready acceptance; it is, however, now given up by the best authorities, and Bernard has shown that fibrine and gluten, in a state of decomposition, but *before* putrefaction has set in, acquire this very property of converting starch into sugar—whereupon he concludes that what is called vegetable diastase is really nothing but the spontaneous decomposition of the gluten.[*]

---

* MIALHE: *Mémoire sur la Digestion et l'Assimilation des Substances amylacées et sucrées*, 1846.

That a chemical action takes place in the mouth, during the ordinary process of eating, is very easily shown. Let the reader take a piece of ordinary bread, and he will perceive that when it is first introduced into the mouth no trace of sweetness is discernible for a few seconds; but as it rolls over the tongue, and the saliva mixes with it, a gradually increasing sweetness is discernible; in from 30 to 45 seconds a decided transformation into sugar has taken place. Moreover, he will find that those portions of the bread which have got fixed between his teeth, and have thus been retained longer under the influence of the Saliva, are noticeably sweeter than bread is wont to be.

The fact that Saliva does convert starchy substances into sugar is thus placed beyond dispute. The researches of Donders, Jacubowitch, Bidder, and Schmidt,[†] moreover, show that if the Saliva be *prevented* from entering the stomach, and starch paste be introduced into the stomach through an opening, no sugar is formed. Their conclusion is this: Although many organic substances convert starch into sugar, none do so with the rapidity of the saliva and the pancreatic juice.

---

[*] BERNARD: *Leçons*, ii. 161.

[†] DONDERS: *Physiologie*, i. 192. BIDDER and SCHMIDT: *Die Verdauungssäfte und der Stoffwechsel*, p. 15, *seq*. This latter work is the most elaborate ever published on the digestive fluids, and will be largely laid under contribution in our pages.

Starch itself is not assimilable. It must be changed into dextrine and sugar before it can pass through animal membranes, and enter the Blood. Now, inasmuch as the starchy substances form an important class of our aliments (see FOOD AND DRINK), the chemical intervention of Saliva in the digestive process is apparent.

We have thus arrived at a very different conclusion from that of Schultz, who attributes to the Saliva the whole of the chemical transformations in Digestion; and from that of Bernard, who denies that any chemical transformations are effected by it. The truth is, that *no* albuminous substance is transformed by the Saliva, and that *all* starchy substances are attacked by it.

Nevertheless we must not exaggerate this influence. It is only a small portion of the starch which is normally acted on by the saliva, either in the mouth or in the stomach; the greater portion is transformed in the intestines by the action of the pancreatic juice and intestinal juice. In consequence of this, the action of the salivary glands may altogether be dispensed with. When they are cut out, or when their secretion is prevented from flowing into the mouth, the animal seems to suffer no material inconvenience.* And Bidder and Schmidt have made the curious discovery that in young animals, during the period of suckling, the salivary glands have no secretion whatever.†

Having vindicated the *chemical* character of this secretion, we must now remark that its *mechanical* character is the most important. The amount of *transformation* is insignificant; but the amount of *maceration* which the food receives in the mouth, by the combined action of the teeth and saliva, is very important, as a preliminary towards the indispensable *solution*, which all food must undergo.

---

* BUDGE: *Memoranda der speciellen Physiologie*, p. 83.

† BIDDER and SCHMIDT, p. 22.

"It is much easier to supply the place of chewing by mechanical preparation in animal food than in vegetable. We can grind things small, but we cannot make artificial saliva. Kitchen science may prepare the former for the stomach, but not the latter. Indeed, the cooking of starchy foods for weak stomachs often makes them more indigestible, by reducing them from a solid to a fluid form, and thus enabling them to be swallowed without that manipulation in the mouth which elicits a flow of its secretions. The best form in which starch can be taken is one in which the envelope of the granule has been ruptured by heat, and the whole mass made light so as to be capable, *by* mastication, of being broken up and fermented equally by fluids, but not capable of skipping over the salivary admixture, and being swallowed *without* mastication. Such are good stale bread, mealy, well-boiled potatoes, thoroughly cooked cabbages: such are *not* new rolls, waxy potatoes, &c., which mastication merely makes into small solid tough lumps; or gruel and sago, and other slops, which annoy the dyspeptic, though so often forced upon him by his female friends." *

---

* CHAMBERS's *Digestion and its Derangements*, p. 331.

There are animals that *bolt* their food. There are human beings who imitate these animals; but it is to be hoped that they have potent stomachs, since they thus throw upon that organ an amount of extra labour, which would better have been executed by the mouth. The food must be rubbed and macerated *somewhere.* If the mouth does not begin this process, the stomach must do it all.

II. STOMACHAL DIGESTION.—The food reaches the stomach in a state approaching that of pulp, and with a slight chemical change in its starchy elements. Formerly it was thought that the stomach did all. Digestion was thought to be the function of the stomach, and of it alone. But recent researches have profoundly modified this conception; they have circumscribed the action of the stomach to that of a still further preparatory process, the completion of which must be sought in the intestines.

Our knowledge of the stomachal process has been rendered more accurate and extensive, owing to a fortunate accident which befell the Canadian known all over Europe as Dr Beaumont's patient. This man, Alexis St Martin by name, had a large hole in his stomach caused by the discharge of a gun. He recovered perfect health, the wound healed, but the opening remained, and this opening was used by Dr Beaumont for observation and experiment. He has recorded the results in a well-known work.* Since then, another case has fallen into scientific hands. Dr Schroeder and Dr Grünewaldt, at different periods, experimented on an Esthonian woman, with what results we shall hereafter learn.[*] And quite recently Alexis St Martin has again become the subject of experiment in the hands of Dr Francis Smith of Philadelphia.[†] The value of these cases cannot be over-estimated; and the results have been compared with observations on animals, since Blondlot conceived the happy idea of establishing an artificial fistula in dogs, through which gastric juice might be obtained when wanted, and substances introduced into the stomach, or removed from it directly.

---

* BEAUMONT: *Experiments and Observations on the Gastric Juice*; 1838.

1. *The mechanical action of the stomach.*—If we examine the stomach of a fasting animal we find its lining walls are pale and flabby, lying close together, and only separated from each other by a layer of mucus and saliva.

It was this appearance which suggested the idea that the sensation of HUNGER was due to the rubbing of the coats of the stomach; an idea which we saw in the first chapter to be altogether erroneous.

The arrival of the food changes this condition. The contractions of the *œsophagus* or gullet (see p. 230, Fig 7, *œ*), force the food into the stomach (E), which distends its walls. This distension goes on increasing and increasing as fast as fresh supplies arrive. Gradually the distension becomes more and more difficult, and this creates a sense of fulness, which warns us to desist from eating. The blood-vessels of the stomach have now become swollen; the secretions are pouring in actively; the whole condition of the stomach is changed, and its muscular activity is roused.

---

[*] SCHROEDER: *Succi gastrici Humani vis digestiva,* 1853. GRUNEWALDT: *Disq. de succo gastrico Humano ope fistulæ stomachalis indagatæ,* 1853. I know these works only at second hand.

[†] His memoir, originally published in the *Philadelphia Medical Examiner,* has been translated in BROWN SÉQUARD'S *Journal de la Physiologie,* i. 144.

This muscular activity is important, being to stomachal digestion what the action of the teeth is in the preparation which takes place in the mouth. The lining of the stomach is a mucous membrane—a continuation, indeed, of that which lines the mouth, but differing from it in the peculiar glands which characterise some regions of it. Under this mucous membrane lies a muscular coat; this muscular coat gives, by the alternate contraction and relaxation of its fibres, a *rotatory* movement to the food. According to Dr Beaumont's graphic expression, the food is *churned* in the stomach, carried round and round from right to left around the large end, and from left to right along the large bend, returning along the small bend.* In this churning movement the food is not only well "ground," but is more and more mixed with the gastric juice. The process may be compared to the rolling about of the food in the mouth by the tongue.

Blondlot maintains that this trituration and maceration constitute the whole of stomachal digestion: the food is rendered liquid without being *chemically altered.* I have shown this to be the case in the digestive process of the *Actiniæ;* but in all the higher animals there is ample evidence of a positive chemical change taking place. And this we shall now consider.

---

* This rotation has been denied by BETZ, who says the disposition of muscular fibres in the stomach is against it.—CANSTATT, *Jahresbericht*, 1853, p. 147. But it seems difficult to admit that Beaumont could have been mistaken when he says he *saw* the food thus rotate.

2. *The chemical action of the stomach.*—Before Réaumur instituted his experiments, it was held that the stomach merely ground the food to a pulp, by the action of *trituration* or rubbing. He tested this opinion in a very ingenious way, considering that the backward state of chemistry could furnish him with none of the means now at our disposal. He filled hollow silver balls with meat, and perforating them in several places, caused a dog to swallow them. After they had remained some time in the stomach, he withdrew them by means of a thread. If, he argued, the digestive process were merely mechanical, the meat, protected by the silver covering, would not be altered; if, however, the process were chemical, the solvent fluid would have penetrated through the holes and acted on the meat; and so indeed it proved—the meat was entirely *chymified;* that is, made into a pulp.

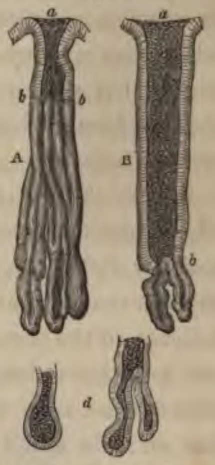
After this the gastric juice itself was obtained, and Réaumur and Spallanzani commenced that long series of experiments on *artificial* digestion which is not yet nearly concluded.

The stomach is lined by a mucous membrane. If we examine this membrane under the microscope, we find it crowded with minute finger-shaped tubes.

These are the *gastric follicles*, or secreting glands, from which the gastric juice is poured into the cavity of the stomach, directly the membrane is irritated by the presence of food (or indeed of any other substance).

Thirty-one pounds daily are said to be secreted from these glands in a healthy adult! Besides this gastric juice which flows on the entrance of food into the stomach, there is also present a secretion of mucus from the membrane, and the saliva, which is constantly being swallowed.

Fig. 4.



VERTICAL SECTION OF GASTRIC FOLLICLES, OR GLANDS, WHICH SECRETE GASTRIC JUICE. *From the stomach of a fasting dog, magnified.*

A, a follicle from the middle of the stomach; B, one from the end near the intestine; *a a*, the openings through which the juice pours into the stomach; *b b b* mark the points where the structure becomes glandular; *d*, small pyloric tubes lined with epithelium to their ends.—After Todd and Bowman.

It would lead us too far, and into questions of too technical an interest, to examine the disputes which gather round the questions—What constitutes the gastric juice? and, What is its origin? For us it is enough to know that the gastric juice is an *acid* secretion, containing in all probability hydrochloric and lactic acids, containing also a peculiar organic substance named *pepsin*.* The acids and the pepsin act chemically upon meats—that is, upon all albuminous and gelatinous substances—converting them into *peptones.* These peptones have all certain properties in common, no matter how various the substances from which they are derived ; and it is owing to these properties, not possessed by the substances from which they are formed, that they are capable of being *absorbed* and *assimilated.*

---

* The student may consult the great work of BIDDER and SCHMIDT, *Die Verdauungssäfte;* LEHMANN'S and MULDER'S Treatises on Organic Chemistry; DONDERS: *Physiologie;* CHAMBERS: *Digestion and its*

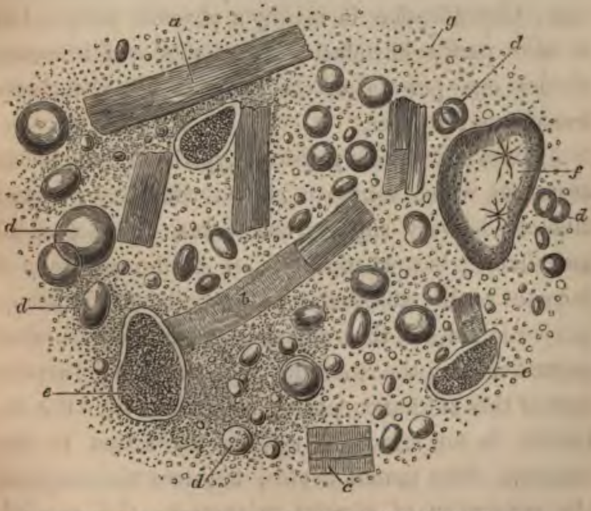
Neither the acid, nor the pepsin, exerts more than a slight chemical influence on two great classes of Alimentary Principles, the Sugars and the Fats. Cane-sugar is changed into grape-sugar, owing, Dr Harley believes, to the presence of a free acid : and fatty acids are sometimes developed from the fats. We may therefore set aside, for the moment, all starch, sugars, fats, and oils, which form so large a proportion of our food, and fix our attention exclusively on the albuminous substances. It is these which mainly undergo *chemical* change in the stomach. And we shall find that even these are not greatly changed ; so that the popular idea of the stomach being the chief organ of Digestion will have to be considerably modified.

During the *churning* motion just described, the food is gradually mixed up with the fluids of the stomach. In consequence of this complete *saturation* it is reduced to a pulpy mass—the *Chyme;* and as it becomes more and more churned—more and more of semi-liquid

Derangements ; LONGET : *Physiologie ;* BLONDLOT'S *Traité de la Digestion,* and his Memoirs in BROWN SÉQUARD'S *Journal ;* and BERNARD'S *Leçons de Phys. Expérimentale,* ii.

consistence—it passes into the small intestines, there to undergo fresh changes. If we examine this pulpy mass of Chyme just as it quits the stomach, we shall find that, however altered to the eye, its alterations have been for the most part physical, and but slightly chemical. That is to say, the *flesh* has become macerated, the *muscle-fibres* have become dissociated and broken into fragments, and the *cellular tissue* is dissolved; but many of these *muscle-fibres* retain their primitive structure; the *fat* is liquefied, but not often otherwise altered—not even emulsified; and the *gelatine* has become liquid peptone.

Fig. 5.



CHYME TAKEN FROM THE PYLORIC END OF A DOG'S STOMACH. *a*, muscular fibre from which the transverse markings have disappeared; *b*. muscular fibre in which these markings are partly visible; *c*, in which they are perfect; *d*, globules of fat; *e* and *f*, starch grains; *g*. granules.—After Claude Bernard.

act chemically upon meats—that is, upon all albuminous and gelatinous substances—converting them into *peptones.* These peptones have all certain properties in common, no matter how various the substances from which they are derived ; and it is owing to these properties, not possessed by the substances from which they are formed, that they are capable of being *absorbed* and *assimilated.*

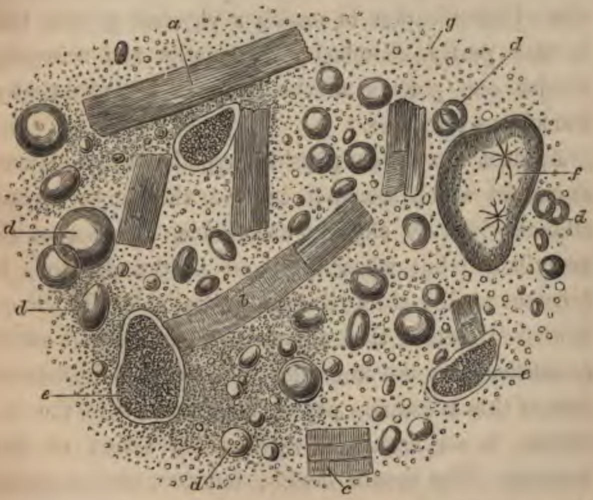
Neither the acid, nor the pepsin, exerts more than a slight chemical influence on two great classes of Alimentary Principles, the Sugars and the Fats. Cane-sugar is changed into grape-sugar, owing, Dr Harley believes, to the presence of a free acid : and fatty acids are sometimes developed from the fats. We may therefore set aside, for the moment, all starch, sugars, fats, and oils, which form so large a proportion of our food, and fix our attention exclusively on the albuminous substances. It is these which mainly undergo *chemical* change in the stomach. And we shall find that even these are not greatly changed ; so that the popular idea of the stomach being the chief organ of Digestion will have to be considerably modified.

During the *churning* motion just described, the food is gradually mixed up with the fluids of the stomach. In consequence of this complete *saturation* it is reduced to a pulpy mass—the *Chyme;* and as it becomes more and more churned—more and more of semi-liquid

Derangements ; LONGET : *Physiologie ;* BLONDLOT'S *Traité de la Digestion,* and his Memoirs in BROWN SÉQUARD'S *Journal ;* and BERNARD'S *Leçons de Phys. Expérimentale,* ii.

consistence—it passes into the small intestines, there to undergo fresh changes. If we examine this pulpy mass of Chyme just as it quits the stomach, we shall find that, however altered to the eye, its alterations have been for the most part physical, and but slightly chemical. That is to say, the *flesh* has become macerated, the *muscle-fibres* have become dissociated and broken into fragments, and the *cellular tissue* is dissolved; but many of these *muscle-fibres* retain their primitive structure; the *fat* is liquefied, but not often otherwise altered—not even emulsified; and the *gelatine* has become liquid peptone.

Fig. 5.



CHYME TAKEN FROM THE PYLORIC END OF A DOG'S STOMACH. *a*, muscular fibre from which the transverse markings have disappeared; *b*, muscular fibre in which these markings are partly visible; *c*, in which they are perfect; *d*, globules of fat; *e* and *f*, starch grains; *g*, granules.—After Claude Bernard.

This is what the microscope reveals, and this is assuredly not a *digested* mass.

Blondlot, indeed, declares that the Chymification we have been describing is the sole digestive process; and Chymification, according to him, is nothing but rendering the food *soluble.* Bernard takes a different view: Chymification he regards as only one part of the digestive process, and that exclusively confined to the albuminous and gelatinous substances, on which its action is precisely analogous to that of *boiling.*

If we attend closely to what goes on in the stomach, as reported by all the most trustworthy observers, we cannot, I think, come to any other conclusion than this: Chymification is mainly a physical process, but is also partly chemical; it liquefies and minutely divides one portion of the food, and it chemically transforms the other.

Against the purely physical hypothesis there is one argument which seems to me overwhelming: Liquid albumen is very slightly absorbable, and not at all assimilable; but when acted on in the stomach, it becomes readily absorbable and assimilable. It seems, moreover, certain, that albumen is absorbed in small quantities from the stomach. The fact that the greater part of this substance passes undigested into the intestine, is no argument against the action of the stomach. The mouth begins, but does not complete, the conversion of starchy substances; the stomach begins, but does not complete, the conversion of albumen.

Albumen, on entering the stomach, is coagulated, and rendered insoluble in water. It must of course be again made soluble. This is effected by the gastric juice, which converts it into a *peptone*, not only soluble, but now incapable of coagulation.

If by heat you coagulate the albumen of the white of egg, and then dissolve it again, you can once more coagulate it by the application of heat. The change has been simply physical: the albumen was liquid, you made it solid; you can make it liquid again, and solid again; as you can turn water into ice, and ice into water. But you cannot do this with the peptone-albumen. *That* has undergone a chemical change, and has become a new body: it is soluble in water now, or in diluted alcohol (not in concentrated alcohol); and is incapable of coagulation, and of forming insoluble compounds *with salts.*

The gastric juice which does this, does so in virtue of its acid and its pepsin, acting together. Separately, these agents have no such power. In artificial digestion, if the acid be neutralised by an alkali—say the carbonate of soda—the action of the gastric juice is immediately suspended, to be resumed immediately on the addition of acid. Bidder and Schmidt have shown that the digestive power of the gastric juice is, up to a certain limit, in direct ratio to its amount of acid. Nevertheless it is not the acid alone which is operative. This is easily proved. Submit the gastric juice to a temperature of 212° Fahr., and it loses all its digestive power whatever; not because the acid has been destroyed, but because the pepsin has been destroyed. Pepsin is an organic substance which acts as a *ferment;* now, Chemistry teaches us that at 212° such organic substances coagulate, and when coagulated they cease to act as ferments.

Freezing the gastric juice has no such influence. Bidder and Schmidt found that when frozen it dissolved albumen as well as before—which, as they remark, must be a great comfort to the admirer of ices.

3. *Gastric Juice.*—Gastric juice is distinguished from among all other animal fluids by its *stability:* it resists decomposition longer than any other animal fluid. Nor does it lose its digestive virtue even when mouldy. One peculiarity must be insisted on, namely, its power of *arresting the putrefaction* of other organic substances. It is to this that we owe the impunity with which we eat "high" game and putrefying meat. Another curious fact is, that although the addition of organic acids increases the digestive power of this fluid, there is a limit at which this increase ceases, and beyond it, excess of acid suspends the whole digestive power. The power is also arrested by the presence of too large a quantity of organic substances, or peptones.

In this latter fact there is a lesson against over-eating. Digestion is impeded by too large a meal, first, in the arrest of the action of the gastric juice; and next, in overloading the stomach with more than it can properly move. There is another fact mentioned by Lehmann,* which is fertile in suggestion, namely, that the addition of water, so far from weakening, *increases* the power of the gastric juice. In this fact we see the impropriety of that advice so often given by writers on Dietetics, to abstain from drinking at dinner, "because," as they assert, "liquid dilutes and weakens the gastric juice." Plausible as this assertion is, we see that it is directly contrary to fact. Our best guide in such cases is instinct; our sensations tell us when to drink, and when to leave off drinking; and we may rest assured that until Science can reconcile its dicta with the dicta of instinct, Science has still something to seek. As Goethe says in *Hermann und Dorothea:*

---

* LEHMANN: *Physiol. Chemie*, ii. 47.

> "Ich tadle nicht gern was immer dem Menschen
> Für unschädliche Triebe die gute Mutter Natur gab.
> Denn was Verstand und Vernunft nicht immer vermögen, vermag oft
> Solch ein glücklicher Hang, der unwiderstehlich uns leitet."[*]

Curiously enough, the digestion of albuminous substances is aided by the presence of *fat.* Whether this influence is simply one of contact (*catalysis,* as the chemists say), or whether the fat itself undergoes some slight chemical change, is undetermined; and at any rate, the quantity changed must be so small as to escape our estimate. The fact having been ascertained, we are led to speculate on its application. May not the custom of our eating bacon or ham with chicken, and not with ducks and geese, have something to do with it?

---

[*] Of which the reader must accept the following prose version:—"I do not readily blame any harmless impulse which the kind Mother, Nature, has given to man. For often, the end which the understanding and reason are unable to attain, is arrived at by a happy instinct or inclination irresistibly leading us."

Saliva also lends its aid in the digestion of albuminous substances, although incapable of itself acting on them. Bidder and Schmidt, indeed, found that it hindered the digestion of coagulated albumen; but Donders found that cooked flesh was more rapidly digested when saliva was mingled with the gastric juice, than when the gastric juice alone was used; and even coagulated albumen was seen to be more rapidly digested when the gastric juice was made alkaline by the addition of saliva, in the case of the Esthonian peasant previously mentioned.*

The preceding paragraph suggests a serious doubt respecting the current theories on the chemistry of Digestion, and is apparently subversive of all those experiments which went to show that digestive power was intimately connected with the acid in the gastric juice. And I am the more disposed to call attention to this difficulty, because nothing is more certain than that a large quantity of alkaline saliva is normally present in the stomach, yet in spite thereof we know that digestion goes on; while it is equally certain that outside the organism, in artificial digestion, alkalies arrest the power of the gastric juice. Here are two contradictory facts: the alkaline saliva is found not to arrest Digestion in the stomach, and alkalies are found to arrest it out of the stomach. Can they be reconciled?

In a former chapter (see p. 112) attention was called to the complication of all vital problems by the necessary interference of the organism itself. We have an illustration in Digestion. *In the organism*, although the alkali of the saliva may neutralise a certain amount of the acid of the gastric juice, it stimulates the gastric follicles to an *increased secretion*, so that, over and above the quantity neutralised, there is a *larger* quantity of gastric juice produced for the purposes of Digestion; and thus *in* the organism, saliva has practically a contrary result from that which it produces *out* of the organism.

---

* DONDERS: *Physiologie*, i. 219.

Nor is this a mere hypothesis, without the warrant of analogy; for if carbonate of soda be administered with iron, the iron is more rapidly attacked by the gastric juice than when administered without the alkali; and this, says Bernard, is owing to the greater secretion of gastric juice which the carbonate of soda determines.

4. *Quantity of Gastric Juice.*—The quantity of gastric juice daily secreted has been very differently estimated, but the calculations of Bidder and Schmidt give the enormous amount of thirty-one pounds, or nearly one quarter of the whole weight of the body.* The quantity is of course variable. It depends on physical and mental conditions, and on the nature of the food eaten; some substances exciting a more active secretion than others. The *quality* is also variable. Grüne-

---

* At the Leeds Meeting of the British Association, Dr Harley stated that he had never found any animal secrete more than one-tenth of its own weight in the twenty-four hours.

waldt and Schröder found the gastric juice of the Esthonian peasant very different under different conditions. When Grünewaldt examined it, the woman was living well, at his expense, and in comfortable quarters; her gastric juice then contained 43 parts of solid matter in 100, and of these 43 no less than 36 were *pepsin.* When Schröder examined it, the woman had been living for some months on spare diet in her own hut, and her gastric juice then, instead of 43 parts in 100, contained only 5½ parts of solid; and instead of 36 parts of pepsin, only 3 appeared!

In presence of differences so great as these, we must hesitate before drawing general conclusions from particular cases. We may also understand from it how food may be digestible at one time, which at another is indigestible.

To close these details respecting gastric juice, it may be mentioned that calculations have been made respecting the quantity of albumen which definite amounts are capable of dissolving. Lehmann estimates that 100 grammes* of juice dissolve 5 grammes of coagulated albumen, on the average. Schmidt estimates it at no more than 2 or 3 grammes. But even if we accept the largest of these quantities, we are forced to admit that the whole amount of the gastric juice secreted during the day would not suffice to dissolve more than *half* the albumen necessary for nutrition—another proof that stomachal Digestion is only one part, and that not the chief part, of the digestive process.

---

* A gramme is somewhat more than 15 grains.

5. *Results of Inquiry.*—Let us now sum up in a few brief propositions the net results at which we have arrived respecting stomachal Digestion :—

1. In the stomach the food is churned, macerated, disintegrated, and much of it liquefied.

2. The Fats have been liberated from their cellular envelope, and have become Oils.

3. The Sugars have been little altered. The cane sugar has been changed into grape sugar, and probably a small proportion has been changed into lactic acid.

4. The Vegetable matters have been more or less divided and made pulpy, but not chemically altered, except some of their starch, which has been altered by the saliva.

5. The Albuminous matters have been macerated, and some portion transformed into peptones. The whole has become a pulp.

Bernard, as we before stated, compares the action of gastric juice on fatty, saccharine, and albuminous matters, to that of boiling water. Boiling liquefies fat by dissolving the cellular envelope; gastric juice does no more, but it does so at a considerably lower temperature. Starch and sugar are not changed by boiling, except that they take up a proportion of water, which makes them what the chemists call *hydrates;* this also, he maintains, is the sole change effected in them by the gastric juice. Boiling *dissolves* the gelatinous parts of the bones and skin, leaving the earthy parts, and the muscular fibre, simply dissociated, but not altered; so does the gastric juice. Finally, Bernard calls attention to the fact that the *intestinal* fluid digests meat which has been boiled, but not raw meat—which shows that boiling may *replace* the action of gastric juice.

Were then the ancients correct in the supposition that stomachal Digestion is merely a process of cooking? To a great extent, yes. The process is in many respects analogous. It differs, however, in one important point, namely, the chemical transformation of the food into *peptones*.

6. *Action of Gastric Juice on the Stomach.*—Before quitting this subject we must glance at another ancient opinion, not yet universally discarded. When one of the Alchemists announced that he had discovered an *universal solvent*, Kunckell the chemist, with quiet wit, asked, "In what kind of vessel do you keep it?" The difficulty which Kunckell felt in conceiving a vessel that could resist the action of an *universal* solvent, was felt by the physiologists, who proclaimed that gastric juice was an universal solvent of animal substances which nevertheless did *not* dissolve the stomach. What protected the stomach? The mysterious entity, named "Vital Principle," which was the *deus ex machinâ*, and universal refuge in cases of difficulty, seemed to them the sole possible cause of this immunity enjoyed by the stomach. In proof, they appealed to the fact that in the dead body the stomach is sometimes seen to be attacked by the gastric juice. Not content with attributing this immunity of the stomach to the Vital Principle, which "suspended the action of chemical laws," they urged this fact of immunity in the

living stomach as a proof of the existence of that very Vital Principle which effected it. Logicians call this arguing in a circle; but let us see if we cannot explain the facts without having recourse to any Vital Principle suspending and superseding chemical laws.*

In the first place, as a matter of fact, the Vital Principle, granting its existence, has *no* power whatever of arresting the action of gastric juice. The proof is easy. Place a little juice under the skin of a *living* animal, and you will find in a short time that the cellular tissue is dissolved, and the parts in contact with the fluid chymified. Bernard kept the hinder extremities of a living frog in contact with gastric juice, and found they were digested by it, in spite of that Vital Principle which, according to its advocates, can suspend all chemical laws.

We thus see that it is not the mere fact of the animal being alive which prevents the gastric juice from acting on its stomach, Life having no mysterious power of "suspending" such actions; but that, whether dead or alive, the gastric juice will dissolve animal tissues. Why then is the stomach protected during life? For precisely the same reason that many poisons which rapidly destroy life when entering the blood, as in wounds, are perfectly harmless when entering the stomach. The savage slays his game with poisoned arrows, and eats the poisoned flesh with impunity.

---

* In our final chapter, on LIFE AND DEATH, we shall examine this ancient hypothesis of a Vital Principle, and expound the modern substitute for it.

This is an interesting, but by no means mysterious, fact. The poison is harmless in the stomach because it cannot be absorbed from the stomach; and unless it be absorbed, and enter the blood, it cannot operate as a poison. There is no question of a Vital Principle here; it is simply a question of Absorption. Let but the epithelial lining * of the stomach be destroyed in any spot, and the poison will there enter in spite of a Vital Principle. The case is analogous with the gastric juice; the pepsin cannot be absorbed, because the epithelial lining of the stomach opposes that absorption. This epithelium, however, is very rapidly and easily destroyed; and in the dead stomach the *destruction,* not being compensated by as rapid a *renewal,* leaves the tissue unprotected against the action of the gastric juice.†

Life therefore endows the stomach with immunity, not because Life suspends the ordinary actions of matter, but because it here *renews* the protecting epithelium as fast as it is destroyed; and thus the phenomenon is explained by clear physiological principles, without invoking the interference of a Vital Principle, the very essence of which is inconceivable, and its modes of action wholly supposititious.

---

* The *epithelium,* or delicate layer of cells which lines the wall of the stomach, is another form of that layer of cells called *epidermis,* or scarf skin (see fig. 2, p. 35) which is the outermost and protecting membrane of the body.

† BERNARD: *Leçons,* ii. 406, *seq.* BASSLINGER gives a very absurd explanation—namely, that nervous influence produces a state of tension in the molecules of the tissue which prevents their being acted on.—MEISSNER, *Bericht über Physiol.*, 1857, p. 201. Since this was in type, I have learned that Dr Harley has shown by experiment that the layer of mucus covering the walls of the stomach is the chief protector against the absorption of gastric juice. This does not disturb the argument in the text.

III. INTESTINAL DIGESTION.—The food has become *Chyme;* we have now to trace its transformation into *Chyle.* It has been, so to speak, cooked; we have now to see it digested.

The pulpy mass of Chyme enters from the stomach into the intestinal canal, and there undergoes its final changes during its passage through an organ the enormous size of which (*thirty feet*, and upwards, in length) is alone sufficient to indicate its importance; and this indication is further borne out by the fact that large and important glands, such as the Liver and the Pancreas, pour their secretion into it. This thirty-feet canal is by anatomists distinguished as if it were two organs, though in reality it is one continuous tube. They speak of it as the Small Intestines—comprising the *Duodenum*, the *Jejunum*, and the *Ileum ;* and the Large Intestines—comprising the *Cœcum*, the *Colon*, and the *Rectum* (see p. 230, fig. 7).

Here it is that *Vegetables* are made to yield whatever digestible material they contain; *fats* are reduced to an emulsion which permits their being absorbed; *starch* is completely converted into *glycose* (starch-sugar); and the undigested *flesh* is converted into peptones.

In the Stomach the *mechanical* processes are predominant; in the Intestine, these are subordinate to the *chemical* processes due to the influence of three fluids, the Bile, the Pancreatic juice, and the Intestinal juice. These we must now separately examine.

1. *The Bile.*—Into the first of the Small Intestines (*Duodenum*) the Liver pours its secretion of Bile at a slight distance from the stomach (see p. 230, fig. 7, B′). No less than three or four pounds of this fluid are daily poured in. The quantity is of course variable, like that of every other secretion, being dependent on individual peculiarity, and on the nature of the food eaten. Fats, and fatty foods, *diminish* the quantity in a notable degree, according to Bidder and Schmidt, who found that cats fed solely on fat secreted no more than 0.327 of a gramme per hour, whereas their secretion on ordinary diet was 0.807 grm.

Although far from denying the conclusion of these able experimenters, I cannot help pointing out a source of fallacy in this experiment, which seems to have escaped criticism. We know that the quantity of Bile secreted is always larger on a full diet than on a spare diet, larger on flesh-diet than on mixed diet; when therefore cats were fed on fat alone, they were fed on a diet which was equivalent to almost none at all, since all animals starve on fat alone. That this objection is valid may be seen in the fact that the quantity secreted by these fat-fed cats is actually the quantity which is secreted by the fasting animal. Had Bidder and Schmidt fed the cats on pure albumen, I believe they would very soon have found the secretion of Bile was no greater than that from fat diet; and for the same reason: pure albumen soon becomes equivalent to almost no food at all. The only positive conclusion I can draw from their experiment is one sufficiently curious—namely, that in spite of Bile being the most hydrocarbonaceous substance in the body, and of fat being a hydrocarbonaceous food, there seems *no* definite relation between the formation of the one and the presence of the other.

There is an important practical question directly connected with this influence of fat on the secretion of Bile. Fats are said to make people bilious. On the other hand, some medical men advise bilious people to eat bacon for breakfast. Now we must distinctly understand that even some medical men talk of "biliousness," when in truth the evil is simply Indigestion; and as fat, if decomposed in the stomach, produces Indigestion, fat may in *this* sense be said to make people bilious. There is, however, a frequent "attack of biliousness" from which some unhappy people suffer, and this arises from a deficiency in the secretion of Bile. The sluggish Liver leaves its work undone, like the over-fed servants of a great house. The best of all stimulants is continued exercise in the open air. But if it could be proved that fat has a tendency to diminish the secretion of Bile, we should therein see the perfect explanation of the common belief that "fats make people bilious."

In the preceding section it was noted that water increased, instead of diminishing, the digestive power of the gastric juice. Its value in digestion is further shown in the fact that it increases the quantity of Bile —not only its amount of liquid, but also its amount of solid matter. A dog, after eating 185 grammes of beef without water, secreted 2.283 grm. of Bile, containing 0.135 solid matter. He was subsequently allowed to take the same weight of water—185 grm.—without beef, and he secreted 5.165 grm. of Bile, containing 0.143 solid matter. On another occasion, after only 25 grm. of beef and 158 grm. of water, he secreted 4.030 of Bile. Very surprising facts, which show the immense importance of water in nutrition.

Flesh increases the secretion considerably beyond that produced by vegetable diet.

2. *The part played by the Bile.*—It would be easy to fill a small volume with the controversies which have long been raging respecting the part played by this secretion in the animal economy; but the reader will not expect anything of the kind here, and may be content with two facts which, if not absolutely beyond dispute, are at any rate fixed on so broad an inductive basis as to command confidence: These are, First, that the Bile is formed *in* the Liver, and *by* the Liver; it does not pre-exist in the blood, although of course its elements are there: Secondly, that it is at once a *secretion* and an *excretion:* the Liver separates from the blood substances which it *forms anew* into a fluid, this fluid taking its part in the digestive process, afterwards to be *reabsorbed* into the blood; and the Liver also separates from the blood, or forms anew, sub-

stances which, though constituting not more than one-eighth of the whole Bile (probably much less), are ejected from the organism as injurious.*

In the stomach *Bile at once arrests Digestion.* If from any cause it has risen into the stomach, as unhappily it sometimes does, we are seized with nausea and vomiting. The evidence for this is so plain that we cannot wonder if many writers have founded on it their disbelief in the digestive influence of the Bile, which they regard as a pure excretion. They overlook one important consideration, however, and forget that, when in the stomach, Bile is out of its right place. The intestine is its right place, and *there* its influence is digestive, although it there also counteracts the action of the gastric juice.

This leads us to a very curious example of the complication and seeming contradiction of organic processes. Bile undoubtedly arrests the influence of the Gastric Juice, inside as well as outside the body. Place a piece of meat in a glass vessel with some gastric juice; the meat will soon manifest a commencement of digestion, the fibres will be dissociated, and the cellular tissue dissolved. If now a little bile be added, the digestive process is suddenly arrested: the gastric juice preserves its acidity, but loses its digestive influence. If, in a second vessel, meat be left in contact with gastric juice only, we find at the end of a few hours that a complete chymification has been effected; whereas the meat to which bile was added remains unaltered, and will continue so for a very long period.

---

* Comp. BIDDER and SCHMIDT, p. 217.

What is the nature of this action? Bernard maintains that it is nothing else than this: the ferment *pepsin*, which is operative in gastric juice, is *precipitated*, as the chemists say (separated and thrown down), and the albuminous substances are once more rendered *insoluble*,* and cease to undergo chemical change.

The reader will remember that the albuminous substances were rendered *soluble* in the stomach by the gastric juice. On reaching the intestine, and there coming in contact with the Bile, they are once more rendered *insoluble:* a yellow precipitate is formed, which sticks to the coats of the intestine; and thus, while the starchy, fatty, sugary substances continue their progress unchanged, the albuminous substances are arrested, and all that was so laboriously achieved in the stomach seems undone again. If there were nothing to counteract this influence of the bile, the digestion of meat would be impossible; fortunately the delay is temporary, and by the action of the pancreatic and intestinal juices, the albumen is once more rendered soluble.

We may now perhaps explain some points which have seemed very puzzling and contradictory. Experiments have been made which prove that when the gall duct, through which the bile pours into the intestine, is opened, and the bile by removal is prevented from entering the intestine, the animal loses weight, and dies in a fortnight or three weeks. This result is intelligible when we reflect that normally the bile is mostly *reabsorbed*, only one-eighth of it passing away as an excretion; so that the loss of all the bile must be an immense drain on the system.

---

* BERNARD: *Leçons de Physiol. Expérimentale,* ii.

But other experiments seemed flatly to contradict this result. The bile was removed, yet the animal lived on, apparently uninjured. Blondlot had a pointer who lived for five years with an artificial opening, or "fistula" in its gall duct; she annually suckled her pups, and went out shooting with her master, as if nothing were the matter. On the strength of this it has been argued that bile is an excretion, and totally useless in Digestion.

The contradiction has been explained thus: when the bile is removed, a much larger quantity of food becomes necessary, indeed as much again must be eaten, to preserve the standard weight. The extra supply of food compensates for the drain occasioned by the loss of the bile.

But we have still to prove that the bile has a digestive action. And that *some* material difference is produced by the bile is clear from the highly fetid odour of the excreta, and the unusual development of gas, when the bile is prevented from pouring into the intestine. Flatulent dyspepsia is the result of a languid secretion from the liver.

We have already seen that the action of bile arrests the digestion of albuminous substances; on sugar and starch its action is inappreciable; on fat its action is peculiar. There is no dispute that the bile greatly assists in the absorption of fat; but *how* it does so is disputed.* Wistinghausen's experiments show that whereas oil can only be made to penetrate an animal membrane when submitted to a high pressure, it penetrates without any pressure at all, if the membrane be moistened with bile. Now all absorption in the organism takes place through membranes, and not through orifices: the absorbent vessels have no open mouths to suck up fluids; the fluids pass into them through their delicate walls.†

3. *The part played by the Pancreatic Juice.*—Under its form of "sweetbread" every one is familiar with the Pancreas. It lies along the under-side of the stomach, and pours its secretion into the intestine through a duct (sometimes two ducts) which enters a little way below the bile-duct (see p. 230, Fig. 7, W).

If Bernard's views of its function are correct, it is the most important organ in the whole course of the alimentary canal, for it possesses the property of forming *fats* into an emulsion, of transforming *starch* into sugar, and of acting on *albuminous substances*—both those precipitated by the bile, and those also which the gastric juice has not yet dissolved. But, he says, it possesses this power over albuminous substances only *after* they have been acted on by the bile. If we take food directly from the stomach, and submit it to the action of the Pancreatic Juice, no such effect ensues; whereas if the food taken from the stomach be first mixed with a little bile, and then submitted to the Pancreatic Juice, the digestive effect is obtained. Thus the successive actions of Gastric Juice—Bile—and Pancreatic Juice, form a necessary series.*

---

* Mr Marcet has recently advanced cogent reasons for supposing that the bile assists in the absorption of the fatty acids, and that these are produced in the stomach from the fats of the food.—*Medical Times*, 28th Aug. 1858. I know only the analysis of this paper given by BROWN SÉQUARD: *Journal de la Phys.*, i. 806.

† See the explanation of *Endosmosis* in the chapter on FOOD AND DRINK, p. 106.

There has been great dispute respecting the functions thus attributed to the Pancreas, and although Bernard replies to his antagonists with great skill and ingenuity, the researches of Colin and Bérard† place beyond a doubt that fat is absorbed even when the Pancreas has been extirpated; and, moreover, the fact of animals digesting when their bile is removed, proves that the Pancreatic Juice *does* act on the food even without the previous action of the bile. We must, therefore, somewhat qualify Bernard's statement, and say that the action of the Pancreatic Juice alone is much less energetic than when following that of the bile; and that although the Pancreas may greatly assist the absorption of fat, it is not indispensable to it.

The united influence of the bile and Pancreatic Juice transforms such portions of the starch as have escaped the action of the saliva into *dextrine* and *glycose* (see p. 197), into which the starch must pass before it can be absorbed; it renders the fats easy of absorption; and it dissolves albuminous substances.

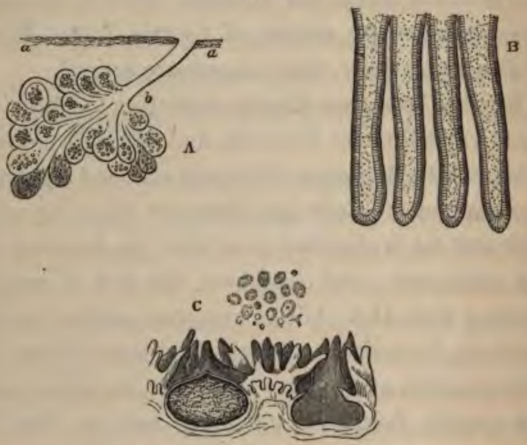
---

* BERNARD: *Leçons,* ii. 441.

† See MEISSNER: *Bericht,* 1857, p. 205.

4. *The Intestinal Juice.*—Although the processes just named are capable of digesting all alimentary substances, the process of Digestion is not really completed by them, but is continued and finished during the passage of the food along the whole length of the intestine, by means of the Intestinal Juice, a fluid secreted from the glands which are imbedded in the lining coat of the intestine. The above figure represents three of these glands, named after Brunner, Lieberkühn, and Peyer, their discoverers.

Fig. 6.



GLANDS IN THE INTESTINE WHICH SECRETE THE INTESTINAL JUICE.

A. *Brunner's gland*—*a a* the mucous membrane of the intestine; *b* the grape-like gland, each lobe of which pours its secretion through a common duct.

B. *Lieberkühn's glands*, being finger-like depressions of the mucous membrane, very like the glands in the stomach.

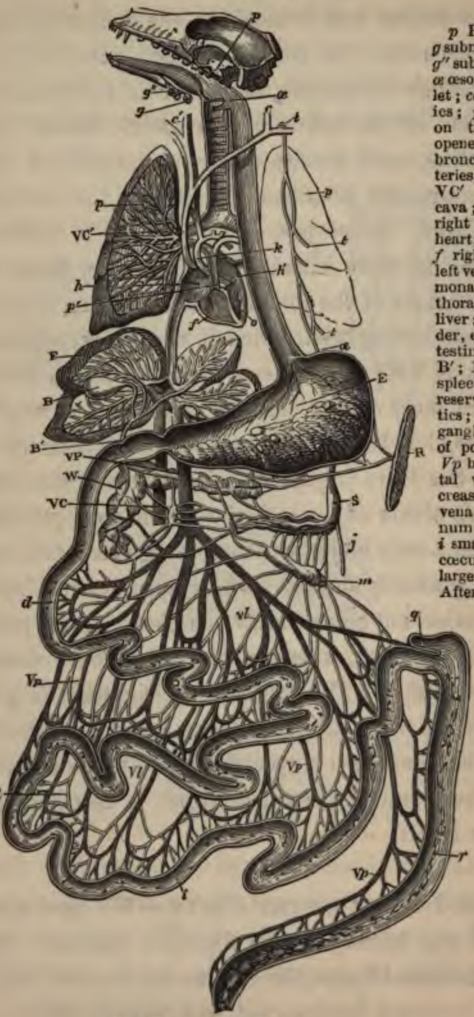
C. *Peyer's glands*—the one to the right is empty, its contents having been discharged: these are figured above. Peyer's glands project on the surface of the intestine, instead of being depressions from it.

The action of this Intestinal Juice has been demonstrated by Bidder and Schmidt in the following ingenious experiment. A coil of a dog's intestine was drawn through an opening, and a thread tied round it, so as to cut off the influx of the gastric fluids; into this intestine, small muslin bags were introduced, containing coagulated albumen and meat; the coil was then replaced. After periods of from six to fourteen hours, the dogs were killed. The bags were found in different regions of the intestine, some having scarcely moved, some having been carried down as far as the caecum (Fig. 7, *g*, p. 230); but in every case the albumen and meat were more or less changed, and had lost weight, some having lost 18, and others 65 per cent of their solids.

In the Sea-Hare (*Aplysia*) I have more than once traced this action of the intestine. The food quits the stomach in a very imperfect state of digestion, and may be traced gradually along the whole length of the intestine, digestion not being finally completed till the *colon* is reached. Indeed, *a priori*, one might have drawn such a conclusion. The function of Digestion is performed by the whole alimentary canal, and if particular parts of this canal have a special office, in virtue of some special development, the whole organ is necessary for the whole result.

IV. THE NATURE OF THE CHYLE.—We have thus completed our history of the digestive process. The food has become Chyme, the Chyme has become Chyle, and the Chyle will be absorbed, and become Blood.

Fig. 7.



p Parotid gland; *g* submaxillarygland; *g''* sublingual gland; *œ* œsophagus or gullet; *cc* carotid arteries; *pp* lungs, that on the left being opened to show the bronchial tubes, arteries, and veins; VC′ superior vena cava; *k* aorta; *h* right auricle of the heart; *h′* left auricle; *f* right ventricle; *o* left ventricle; *p′* pulmonary artery; *tt* thoracic duct; F liver; B gall bladder, entering the intestine by the duct B′; E stomach; R spleen; S Pecquet's reservoir; *j* lymphatics; *m* mesenteric ganglia; VP trunk of portal vein; *Vp Vp* branches of portal vein; W pancreas; VC inferior vena cava; *d* duodenum; *Vl* lacteals; *i* small intestine; *q* cœcum; *r* colon, or large intestine. — After Bernard.

The Digestive Tract.

The preceding diagram, copied from Bernard, may assist the amateur in following the course of the digestive tract.

In the mouth the food is acted on by the saliva issuing from the *parotid* (*p*), the *submaxillary* (*g*), and the *sublingual* glands (*g′*). It passes along the *œsophagus* (*œ*), and reaches the *stomach* (E), whence it passes into the *duodenum* (*d*), and the whole length of the *small intestine* (*i*), to the *cæcum* (*q*), and *colon* (*r*).

During its course, such portions of the food as have become soluble are absorbed—1, by the *Portal Veins* (*Vp*), which carry them to the *Liver* (F), and, 2, by the *lacteals* (*Vl*), minute absorbent vessels which carry them to the *reservoir of Pecquet* (S), from whence they are transmitted by the *thoracic duct* (*tt*) to the *subclavian vein*, where they join the blood. The other parts of this diagram will be explained hereafter. Meanwhile, if the reader considers for a moment the immense preponderance of the absorbent portal veins over the absorbent lacteals, he will see that the popular notion of the Chyle, which is found in the lacteals, being the quintessence of the food, is altogether erroneous. If we call Chyle that which is found in the intestine before absorption, we may be justified in the assertion that the object of digestion is to make Chyle. But if we suppose that the fluid circulating in the chyliferous vessels (lacteals) is all the Chyle, we shall greatly err. *This* Chyle is really little more than ordinary lymph and fat. The chief part of the digested food, chief in quality as in quantity, *never* enters the lacteal vessels, but is carried by the portal veins to the liver. Comparative anatomy, teaching as it does that birds have *no* lacteals, that reptiles have none, and that fishes have none, plainly teaches that the function of these vessels must be special, and Claude Bernard maintains that it is limited to the absorption of fat.

V. CAUSES OF INDIGESTION. — In unfolding the various stages of the digestive process, we have at the same time unfolded several of the causes which may disturb that process, and afflict human beings with a slight or terrible attack of Indigestion.

It is certain that if the food be not well masticated and saturated with saliva, we must have the powerful gastric juice of a dog, or a lion, to compensate this deficiency; otherwise a larger proportion of the unchanged food will be transmitted to the intestines than they can well manage, or will lie like a load oppressing the stomach. The starch will descend in lumps, and although much of it will be dissolved by intestinal digestion, some will pass away undigested.

If the secretion of Gastric Juice be languid, or if that fluid be not sufficiently acid, chymification will be laborious and painful. If the bile rise in the stomach, digestion will cease; if the secretion of bile be too scanty, the food will lie like a burden, and produce diarrhœa or sickness; and so on to the end of the chapter. Let there be only a little less acid, or a little more alkali, each of which depends on complex conditions, and Digestion, which to the young and healthy is as easy as it is delightful, becomes the source of misery.

Ill-selected food is one source of these evils; but it has been touched on in a previous chapter, and need not detain us now. Want of fresh air and exercise is another source. The action of the liver is particularly affected by exercise; and all who suffer from biliousness should pay their fees to the livery stable and waterman, horse-exercise and rowing being incomparably the best of prescriptions. A walking excursion, especially in mountain districts, and with resolute avoidance of walking too much, will be of great service to the dyspeptic. It is important to bear in mind, moreover, that although sedentary habits are very injurious to the Digestion, they are less so than bad ventilation; those who sit long, and sit in bad air, are sure to suffer. We shall touch on this point in the chapter on RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

The influence of the Nervous System is perhaps even more prominently manifested than that of any other cause of Indigestion. It is comparatively rare to meet with Indigestion among artisans, in spite of their ill-cooked food, their exposure to all weathers, and other hardships; and it is as rare to meet with good Digestion among the artisans of the brain, no matter how careful they may be in food and general habits. Protracted thought, concentrated effort in the directions of Philosophy, Science, or Art, almost always exact a terrible price. Nerve-tissue is inordinately expensive. But it is worthy of remark, that mere intellectual activity, when unaccompanied by agitating emotion, never seems to affect the Digestion, unless the effort be of an unusual intensity. Our passions are destroying flames. Anger, Ambition, Envy, Despair, Sorrow, and even sudden Joy, immediately disturb the digestion. A letter bringing bad news, the sight of anything which painfully affects us, a burst of temper, or an anxious care, will sometimes render the strongest of us incapable of digesting a meal. If the food be swallowed, it will not be digested, or digested only at a vast expense. And herein may be learned a lesson against a very common mistake committed by very sensible people. When a friend is overwhelmed with grief, we try to force him gently to take the food he obstinately refuses. "Do try and eat a mouthful; it is necessary for your strength; you will fall ill." Perhaps our entreaties succeed; he takes a little food "as a support." Error! the food will weaken, not strengthen him. In such cases Instinct may safely be relied on. When a man is hungry, he will eat. When he will not eat, he should be left in peace until hunger prompts. If in compliance with the entreaties of friends he takes a meal, it will do him harm rather than good. There are, indeed, people who think that to eat in times of sorrow, is a proof of want of feeling, and that their appetite is a sign of disrespect; as if appetite were subject to the will. Such people must be reasoned with, and told that it is as foolish to refuse food when the appetite demands it, as to eat it when the system rebels against it.

There is another direction in which the Nervous System influences Digestion, although it can only be briefly alluded to here. When we come to treat of nervous phenomena, we shall more particularly examine the nature of Reflex Action; at present it is enough to say, that certain parts of the organic mechanism are so intimately allied in action, that they are said to *sympathise* with each other. All parts of the alimentary canal sympathise. Whenever the saliva is profusely secreted, the gastric juice "sympathises," and is also secreted; and any irritation of the mucous membrane of the stomach increases the flow of saliva. This is a fact to be borne in mind, the more so as few persons seem thoroughly aware of it, although it serves as a simple indication of an irritated state of the stomach, which they might well note. In my own person I have frequent experience of it; and the presence of an unusual flow of saliva is always a warning to me that the mucous membrane of my stomach is affected. Dr Gairdner mentions the remarkable case of a man who secreted from six to eight ounces of saliva during a meal of broth which was injected into his stomach; and the reverse has been observed—an excitation of the nerves of taste producing a flow of gastric juice and bile.*

The deduction from these facts is simple and important. All who are troubled with a deficiency of gastric juice should be careful to let their food be as full of *flavour* as possible. Tasteless food, by leaving the nerves of taste comparatively quiet, leaves the secretion of gastric juice proportionately feeble. Food which has a relish can be more easily digested. Every one knows that we can eat a variety of dishes with less labour in digestion, than a smaller quantity of one kind of food, simply because the variety of "relish" makes the digestive process more active.

---

* GAIRDNER: *Edin. Med. and Surg. Journal*, [illegible]. BROWN SÉQUARD: "Lectures" in *Lancet*, Nov. 1858, p. 467.

It is, I conceive, from the same law of sympathetic action that smoking, after a meal, assists digestion. There has been much discussion respecting the injuriousness of smoking, ever since Tobacco was first discovered; but as Physiology was—and still is in most circles—little understood, a very considerable amount of nonsense has been, and continues to be, uttered on this question. It is a positive fact that the gastric secretion can at any time be produced by simply stimulating the salivary glands with tobacco; and, as before stated, whatever stimulates the secretion of saliva promotes that of the gastric juice. Smoking does this. A cigar *after* dinner is therefore to that extent beneficial. Not so *before* a meal.

But the action of tobacco is not confined to this—it has other influences, some beneficial, some injurious; the amount of injury depends on the nature of the organism; and therein each person must judge for himself. There is only one caution which it is right to place before the reader. When tobacco is said to be not injurious, but beneficial, it must always be understood to mean tobacco in small quantities. Excess in tobacco is very injurious; so also is excess in alcohol;

so also would be excess in mutton-chops. All excess is dangerous. All stimulants should be used sparingly. Yet the man who never thinks of exceeding his half a-pint of wine, or pint of beer, daily, makes no scruple of smoking a dozen cigars. From my own experience, rendered vigilant as I am by a delicate digestion and an easily disturbed organism, I am [illegible] that two cigars daily, always taken after and never before, the chief meals, have proved [illegible] decidedly beneficial in many directions; and I would no more think of increasing that quantity than of increasing my daily quantity of coffee or beer. Other organisms could of course endure greater quantities. Each must determine the proper limit for himself, and having determined it, abide by it.

Among the many slight causes of imperfect digestion is to be reckoned the very general [illegible] to eating between meals. The powerful digestion of a growing boy makes light of all such irregularities; but to see adults, and often those by no means in robust health, eating muffins, buttered toast, or bread-and-butter, a couple of hours after a heavy dinner, is a distressing spectacle to the physiologist. *It takes at least four hours to digest a dinner*; during that period the stomach should be allowed repose. A little tea, or any other liquid, is beneficial rather than otherwise; but solid food is a mere encumbrance: there is no gastric juice ready to digest it; and if any reader, having at all a delicate digestion, will attend to his sensations after eating muffin, or toast, at tea, unless his dinner has had time to digest, he will need no sentences of explanation to convince him of the serious error prevalent in English families of making tea a light meal, quickly succeeding a substantial dinner.

Regularity in the hours of eating is far from necessary; but regularity of *intervals* is of primary importance. It matters little at what hour you lunch or dine, provided you allow the proper intervals to elapse between breakfast and luncheon, and between luncheon and dinner. What are those intervals? This is a question each must settle for himself. Much depends on the amount eaten at each meal, much also on the rapidity with which each person digests. Less than four hours should never be allowed after a heavy meal of meat. Five hours is about the average for men in active work. But those who dine late—at six or seven—never need food again until breakfast next day, unless they have been at the theatre; or dancing; or exerting themselves in Parliament; in which cases a light supper is requisite.

We have thus traced Food through its metamorphoses into Chyle. As Chyle, it is absorbed by the lacteals and veins to join the Blood. It is this complex fluid which we have now to examine.

CHAPTER IV.

THE STRUCTURE AND USES OF OUR BLOOD.

Blood the river of life—Erroneous notions about medicines "purifying" the blood—How it circulates—Capillary vessels—The substances it carries: iron and soap—The blood-discs: their discovery by Malpighi and Leeuwenhoek—Hewson's researches—Size of the discs in various animals—The nucleus—The colourless corpuscles: analogy between them and the Amœbæ—What is an Amœba?—The parasite which lives in our blood—Development of blood-cells—Is the blood alive?—Coagulation and its cause—Chemical composition of the blood—Variations of, in different people—Differences between arterial and venous blood—The gases they contain—Cause of the change of colour—The marvel of the circulation—Quantity of our blood—Blood-letting—Transfusion: history of the attempts; when it may be successfully employed—Blood does *not* form the organs—Vivifying elements of blood: arterial nourishes, and venous excites the tissues—Oxygen as a condition of nutrition—How does the blood nourish?—Each organ determining the nutrition of the rest—Relation between circulation and assimilation.

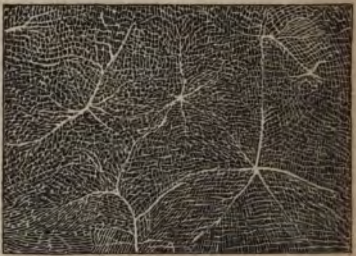
BLOOD is a mighty river of life. It is the mysterious centre of chemical and vital actions as wonderful as they are indispensable, soliciting our attention no less by the many problems offered to speculative ingenuity, than by the important practical conclusions to which our ideas respecting the Blood necessarily lead. By some the Blood is regarded as the source of all diseases, and to "purify the Blood" is the object of their treatment. Many quacks seize on this notion, and in sublime ignorance of the nature of the Blood they profess to purify, and of the means by which their drugs could possibly purify it, make fortunes out of the credulity of the public. I would warn my readers at the outset against this notion of "purifying" their Blood. Not that the Blood is always healthy and pure, free from hurtful substances, and rich in needful substances; but Nature herself takes this purification in hand, whenever it is possible—or, to speak less ambiguously, the organic processes upon which our existence depends for its continuance are themselves the means by which the Blood is kept at its proper standard, hurtful substances removed, and needful substances carried to it. The Blood is not like a river into which anything, and in any amount, may be introduced from without. It gets rid of, or destroys, all substances which do not form part and parcel of its own structure; or, failing in that, it ceases to act as living blood. And of those substances which form part and parcel of its structure, it will only take up, or retain, certain definite quantities—the surplus is rapidly got rid of. Let a man drink gallons of water, and his blood will not be more watery than before. Let him take quantities of salt, and his blood will not be more saline. In the incessant changes which take place within the circulating system, the Blood itself constantly tends towards uniformity of composition.

Nor is this all. On the supposition that we could "purify the blood" of a diseased patient, nothing would be gained by it, as respects his cure; for the malady under which he labours does not lie in the blood, but in the tissues; and when they are in a diseased condition, it is of no use to present them with purer blood; because, although they take from the blood all the materials for their nutrition, they can only take such as their condition allows. But we shall explain this more fully hereafter.

This river of Life is impetuously rushing through every part of the body, by means of an elaborate network of canals. In the course of the year, these canals carry not less than three thousand pounds' weight of *nutritive* material *to* the various tissues, and three thousand pounds' weight of *wasted* material *from* the tissues.

At every moment of our lives there is something like ten pounds of Blood rushing along in one uninterrupted throbbing stream, from the heart through the great arteries, which branch and branch like the boughs of a tree, the vessels becoming smaller and smaller as they subdivide, till they are invisible to the naked eye, and are then called *capillaries* (hair-like vessels), although they are no more to be compared in size with hairs, than hairs are to be compared with cables. These capillaries form a network much finer than the finest lace—so fine, indeed, that if we pierce the surface, at almost any part, with the point of a needle, we open one of these vessels and let out its contents. But as even this will not convey an idea of the fineness of the capillary network, we will give a figure of the vessels on the surface of a rabbit's liver, magnified eleven times.

Fig. 8.



CAPILLARY BLOOD-VESSELS ON THE LIVER.

This, which we have copied from Virchow, shows us how densely crowded the vessels are; they seem to form nearly the whole bulk of the liver.

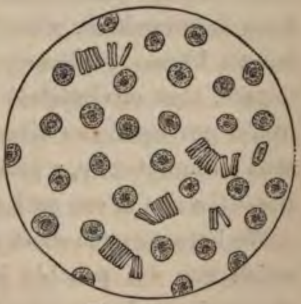
Through the *walls* of these capillaries, the Blood suffers some of its nutritive material to ooze, receiving in exchange the worn-out material of the tissues. The Blood has now ceased to be arterial, and has become venous. The stream continues its course through the veins, which, commencing in the capillaries, reverse the arrangement we noticed in the arteries, and become less and less numerous, their twigs becoming branches, and their branches trunks, till they reach the heart.

In this ceaselessly-circulating stream forty or more different substances are hurried along: it carries gases, it carries salts, it carries metals—nay, it carries what may be called soaps. The iron, which it washes onwards, can be separated; and Prof. Bérard used to exhibit a lump of it in his lecture-room—so that one ingenious Frenchman was led to suggest that coins should be struck from the metal extracted from the blood of great men! Lest this statement should mislead the reader, I will add that the quantity of iron in the blood is extremely small; but as the quantity of blood is large, and is perpetually being renewed, it affords the chemist the means of extracting a lump of iron from it.

Let us now examine the principal constituents of this organic structure—first its solid, and then its liquid parts.

1. *The Blood-discs.* — Although to the naked eye the blood appears a simple fluid, having a colour more or less scarlet, the microscope assures us that it is a fluid which carries certain solid bodies of definite shape and size—so definite, indeed, that a mere stain, no matter where, will, to the experienced eye, betray whether it be the blood of a mammal, a bird, a reptile, or a fish.

Fig. 9.



Blood-Discs.

Prick your finger with a needle, place the drop on the glass-slide under your microscope, cover it with a thin glass, and look. You will be surprised, perhaps, to observe that the blood which had so deep a tint of scarlet in the mass, is of a pale reddish yellow, now that it is spread out on the slide; whereupon you conclude that the depth of tint arose from the dense aggregation of those reddish-yellow *discs*, which you observe scattered about, some of them sticking together, and presenting the appearance of piles of half-sovereigns.

It is these "floating solids" of the blood upon which your attention must now be fixed. They are variously named *Blood-corpuscles, Blood-globules, Blood-cells,* and *Blood-discs.* It is a pity that one term is not finally adopted; and blood-discs seems on the whole the best, as being descriptive, without involving any hypothesis. Meanwhile, since physiologists use all these terms, the reader must be prepared to meet with all.

The first person who saw these blood-discs was undoubtedly Swammerdamm, in 1658; but as his observations were not published till a century afterwards, and as in Science priority can only rightfully be awarded to him who first publishes, the title of discoverer is given to Malpighi, who saw and described them in the blood of a hedgehog in 1661. He saw them, but did not understand them. They appeared to him to be only globules of fat.

The commencement of accurate knowledge dates from Leeuwenhoek, who, in 1673, detected them in human blood. "These particles," he says, "are so minute, that one hundred of them placed side by side would not equal the diameter of a common grain of sand; consequently, a grain of sand is above a million times the size of one such globule." *

We have now the exact measurement of these discs, which was not possible in his day. Extending his observations, Leeuwenhoek found that in birds and fishes, as well as in quadrupeds, the *colour* of the blood was due to these discs. He seems to have been puz-

* LEEUWENHOEK: *Select Works,* i. 89.

zled by the fact, that in fishes the discs are not round, but oval; and he at first attributed this to the compression exercised by the vessels. It is instructive to hear him confess that he could not persuade himself "that the natural shape of the particles of blood in fishes was an oval; for inasmuch as a spherical seemed to me the more perfect form." * He was too good an observer, however, to permit such metaphysical conceptions long to mask the truth, and, accordingly, he described and figured the blood-discs in the fish as oval.†

It is to Hewson that science is indebted for the most accurate and exhaustive investigation of the blood which has been made from 1770 down to our own time; and it has been even asserted by one whose word is an authority,‡ that Hewson's works contain the germ of all the discoveries made in our own day.

There is something at once painful and instructive in the fact, that, after the publication of researches so precise and important as those of Leeuwenhoek and Hewson, the whole subject should have been suffered for many years to lapse into ignorant neglect; and instead of any progress being made, we find the most eminent physiologists at the beginning of the present century (Richerand and Majendie, for example) deny-

---

* LEEUWENHOEK, *Select Works*, ii. 233.

† In the larva of the *Ephemeron* the blood-discs are as nearly as possible oat-shaped.

‡ MILNE EDWARDS: *Leçons sur la Phys. et l'Anat. Comp.*, i. 44. The works of HEWSON have been edited, and in a very valuable manner, by Mr GULLIVER, for the "Sydenham Society."

ing positively that the blood-discs existed, or that the microscope could tell us anything about them.* Nevertheless, there is not an amateur of the present day who is not familiar with them. Science has carefully registered the exact measurements and forms of these discs, in upwards of five hundred different species of animals.

Contempt of microscopic research seriously retarded the progress of Physiology; it has its parallel in a similar contempt inspired by the great Linnæus respecting the application of the microscope to Botany; and as the physiologists of this century have had to rediscover what was known to Leeuwenhoek and Hewson, so also have the botanists had to rediscover what was familiar to Malpighi.

2. *Influence of the Form of the Discs.*—There must assuredly be some relation between the *form and size* of these discs and their *function;* but what that relation is, no one has yet made out. In general, the larger discs are found in the less advanced organisms; that is to say, they are larger in the embryo than in the adult, larger in birds than in mammals, larger in reptiles and fishes than in birds. But they are largest of all in the Triton and Proteus, which being reptiles are exceptions to this rule. Nor can the rule be taken absolutely, even within those limits we have named, since although reptiles are less advanced in organisa-

---

* Milne Edwards notices a similar denial made by M. Giacomini at the Pisa Congress of scientific men in 1839—a denial which pretended to be based on original investigations.

tion than mammals, and have larger discs, it is not the least advanced among the mammals that have the largest discs;—for instance, the ruminants are less advanced than the quadrumana, yet among mammals the ruminants have the smallest discs; and in man they are as large as in rodents.*

3. *Structure of the Discs.*—The structure of these bodies is necessarily difficult of study. Leeuwenhoek, and others, observed that in the discs of the fish and reptile there is always a central spot, which appears dark, or clear, according as it is viewed by transmitted, or reflected, light. This appearance was interpreted as indicating a hole in the discs, which made them resemble quoits. But Hewson settled the point by proving the central spot to be a solid *nucleus*, which he saw escaping from its envelope, and floating free in the liquid—an observation subsequently confirmed.

It is worthy of remark that this nucleus is seen with difficulty when the blood is newly drawn from a vessel, although it speedily becomes distinct, especially if a little water be added. This has led Valentin, Wagner, Henle, Donders, and Moleschott to the conclusion that the nucleus is *not* present in living discs, but arises from *internal coagulation* on exposure of the discs to the air: a conclusion rejected by Mayer and Kölliker, the former averring that he has *seen* the nucleus while the blood-discs were still circulating in the capillaries of a young frog's foot. I have not been able to see this in the large discs of the Triton, and know not if Mayer's observation has been confirmed by any other microscopist.

---

* In man their diameter varies between $\frac{1}{3000}$ and $\frac{1}{3500}$ of an inch; and their average thickness is $\frac{1}{12400}$ of an inch. VIERORDT estimates that in about $\frac{1}{160}$ of a cubic inch there are as many as 5,055,000 of these discs.

The most perfect opportunity I ever enjoyed of seeing the nucleus, under the circumstances mentioned by Mayer, was with Professor von Siebold, when examining the gills of the embryo of *Salamandra atra.* This salamander brings forth its young alive; but it lives high up in the mountains, out of the reach of water, and its young would perish were they to come into the world like the young of other salamanders; namely, as tadpoles. Instead, therefore, of going through its metamorphoses in the water, the young *Salamandra atra* goes through them in its mother's body, and is born with perfect lungs, and without gills. Professor von Siebold removed two or three of these young ones before they had completed their metamorphoses, while therefore they were still in the tadpole state; and the elegant appearance under the microscope of their long delicate gills, like gelatinous fern-leaves, was exquisite. The excessive transparency of these gills rendered our observation of the circulation peculiarly favourable; but although I gave special attention to it, I could not detect the nucleus.

But there are other grounds on which I should be disposed to accept the fact of the nucleus being normally present, and not simply the result of coagulation: the chief of these is, that in the embryo of every mammal we discover nuclei in the discs, whereas in the adult animal no nuclei are discoverable, even after long exposure to the air; and the philosophic zoologist well knows in how many minute particulars the *embryonic* state of the higher animals represents the *permanent* state of the lower. In the discs of all adult mammalia the nucleus is absent; what has sometimes been mistaken for it is simply a central depression of the disc, which gives it the form of a bi-concave lens. Nevertheless, although the nucleus is absent in the adult, it is present in the embryo.

Robin says that *almost* all the discs have a nucleus when first the blood appears, but even then some are without it. "By the time the embryo has attained a length of thirty *millimètres*, at least one-half of the discs are without a nucleus, and the number goes on increasing, although even as late as the fourth month a few rare examples may be found." From that period, he says, they are no longer visible in the *human* subject;[*] but I have seen on two occasions what may have been the nucleus in a few discs of a newborn kitten, and *one* in a drop of blood of an adult mole.[†]

4. *The Colourless Corpuscles.*—There are other bodies in the blood beside these, and they are known

---

[*] C. Robin: *Sur quelques points de l'Anat. et de la Phys. des globules rouges*, in Brown-Séquard's *Journal de la Physiologie*, i. 298.

[†] Mr Wharton Jones, one of our best investigators, says that the blood of the elephant and the horse contains a few of these nucleated discs. Nasse has seen them in the blood of pregnant women, and Mr Busk found *one* in that of a man. Kölliker disputes the accuracy of these observations, and thinks that in each case the nucleus was pro-

singular animal it is. Bilharz describes it, under the name of *Distoma hæmatobium*, as a double animal, the sexes being perfectly separate, the male lodging the female in a sort of tube extending along its stomach. With two heads and two tails, it seems only to have one body. This specimen of "two single parasites rolled into one," is only found in the blood of man, and is as limited in its choice of a home as the parasite which finds a home in the brain of the sheep (producing there the "staggers," well known to farmers), or the parasite which gives pigs the "measles."*

The colourless corpuscles are not numerous in healthy human blood, and play but a secondary part, unless we assume, with many physiologists, that they are the early stage of the red-discs. Professor Draper speaks unhesitatingly to this effect. He says there are three periods in the history of our blood-cells. Those of the first period originate simultaneously with, or even previously to, the heart—these are the embryonal cells which are colourless and nucleated. These becoming liquid internally, are developed into the cells of the second period, which are red, nucleated, and oval, like the normal cells of reptiles. The cells of the third period replace these, "the transition being clearly connected with the production of lymph and chyle corpuscles." This change takes place at the close of the second month of fœtal life; and from henceforwards no change is observable; the cells continue to be red, bi-concave, non-nucleated, and circular. "The cell of the first period is therefore spherical, white, and nucleated; that of the second, red, disc-shaped, and nucleated; that of the third, red, disc-shaped, bi-concave, and non-nucleated. The primordial cell advances to development in different orders of living beings. The blood of the invertebrated animals contains coarse granule-cells, which pass forward to the condition of fine granule-cells, and reach the utmost perfection they are there to attain in the colourless nucleated cell of the first period of man. In oviparous vertebrated animals, the development is carried a step further, the red nucleated cell arising, and in them it stops at this, the second period. In mammals the third stage is reached in the red non-nucleated disc, which is therefore the most perfect form." *

---

* BILHARZ in SIEBOLD ŭ. KÖLLIKER'S *Zeitschrift*, 1849, p. 207.

The resemblance here indicated between the *transitory* forms of the blood in the higher animals, and the *permanent* forms of the blood in the lower animals, points at a hidden law of organic combination which will perhaps one day be detected, and which will effect for Biology as much as the law of definite proportions has effected for Chemistry. No one can have studied the development of animals, without being profoundly impressed with the conviction that there is something deeper than coincidence in the recurrence of those forms, however transitory, which characterise the permanent condition of some animals simpler in organisation.

The colourless corpuscles are found by Moleschott to be far more numerous in children than in adults.

---

* DRAPER: *Human Physiology*, p. 115.

The difference between the blood of youth, manhood, and old age, is but trifling; yet there is a continual decrease with age. Women, when in their ordinary condition, have fewer corpuscles than men; but during pregnancy, and other periods, the quantity increases, without, however, reaching that in the blood of children. Albuminous food increases the quantity.*

5. *Is the Blood alive?*—After making ourselves acquainted with these blood-cells and their history, which even the amateur may do with pleasure and profit, we shall have to meet the question—*Is the blood alive?*—a question often debated, and not without its interest to the speculative mind. Harvey † held the blood to be the "primigenial and principal part, because that in and from it the fountain of motion and pulsation is derived; also because the animal heat or vital spirit is first radicated and implanted, and the soule takes up her mansion in it." We see here the influence of the ancient philosophy. Harvey further declares, "Life consists in the blood (as we read in Holy Scripture), because in it the Life and Soule do first dawn and last set. . . . The blood is the genital part, the fountain of Life, *primum vivens, ultimum moriens.*"

Harvey's views were taken up, with modifications, and argued earnestly by Hunter, in his celebrated work *On the Blood.* The constant objection urged against

---

* *Wiener Med. Wochenschrift*, 1854. No. 8.

† HARVEY: *Anatomical Exercitations concerning the Generation of Living Creatures*, 1653. Exc. 51, p. 276.

Hunter by his contemporaries and successors, was their inability to conceive a *living liquid;* but Milne Edwards meets this by saying that it is not the *liquid* which is alive, but the *cells* floating in that liquid, and these he regards as organisms.

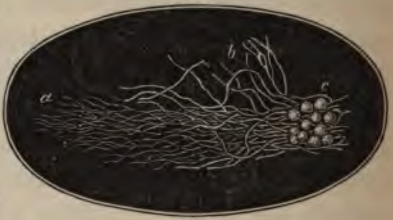
The reader must feel that the discussion of such a question cannot be brought to an issue, unless preceded by an accurate definition of the terms employed. What is meant by the blood being alive? If it be meant that an organic structure, having a specific composition, and passing through a definite cycle of changes—such as Birth, Growth, Development, and Death, can truly be said to *live,* then blood, which manifests these eminent phenomena of life, must be pronounced to be alive.

This, however, no one would think of denying. But if it be meant that blood has an *independent* vitality, unlike the vitality of any other tissue, a vitality which can be manifested apart from the organism, the opinion seems wholly untenable. Blood is vital, and has vital properties; but so has every tissue of the body, and in no sense can we attribute to it independent life.

6. *The liquid Plasma of the Blood.*—Having touched upon the floating solids, we must now direct attention to the liquid in which they float. This is called the plasma, or liquor of the blood—*liquor sanguinis.*

Although this plasma is perfectly liquid when in the vessels, yet no sooner does it pour from them, than there separates from it a sort of jelly, leaving behind a yellow fluid. This jelly-like mass is *Fibrine;* the yellow fluid is the *serum*. As the Fibrine separates, and becomes solid, it entraps some of the red-discs in its meshes, and the two are then named the *clot*. The process of becoming solid is called *coagulation*.

Fig. 10.



FIBRINE.

The following figure, copied from Virchow, represents the aspect of this coagulated Fibrine, magnified 280 times. At *c* the discs may be observed entrapped in the meshes. The Fibrine itself takes the form of fine and broad fibres, as seen at *a* and *b*.

The fact of coagulation has always been known; indeed, it could not have escaped observation, being the almost constant result of exposure of blood to the air. The blood of all vertebrate, and many invertebrate animals, has this property; but having observed in several of the Mollusca that no coagulation takes place, I propose, when my researches are finished, to draw up a list of all the animals which are thus excepted from the general law, hoping that these data will furnish some interesting result.

Although the fact was known to the ancients, it was only in the 17th century that this coagulation was discovered to be dependent on the solidification of a peculiar substance. Malpighi* washed the clot free from its discs, and found that the remaining substance was a mass of white fibres. Borelli, at the same epoch, declared this substance to be liquid in the blood, and that it coagulated spontaneously when the blood was drawn from the veins. Ruysch discovered that by whipping the blood, as it poured out, the whipping twigs were covered with a mass of white elastic filaments, exactly similar to that which was got in washing the clot free of its discs.

---

* MALPIGHI: *Opera Omnia*, 1666, p. 123; cited by MILNE EDWARDS.

This substance was named Fibrine by Fourcroy, and it was universally believed to be identical with the substance of muscular fibre. The idea was too plausible not to be at once accepted. The formation of muscle-fibres from fibrine seemed the easiest thing in the world; although really, when the idea comes to be closely examined, it is as wide a departure from all that we know of the formation of muscle, as the notion of eating brains to get more brains, or drinking milk to make milk. We now know that blood-fibrine is *not* the same substance as muscle-fibrine (which is called *musculine*, or *syntonin*), and we know that muscles are not formed by this spontaneous coagulation.

What fibrine is, whence it comes, and what purpose it subserves, are questions upon which science is at present so far from settled that I shall say nothing here about them.[*]

---

[*] The student will do well to consult SIMON: *Lectures on Pathology*, p. 49 *et seq.* BROWN-SÉQUARD'S *Journal*, i. p. 296. BRÜCKE: *Ueber die Ursache der Gerinnung des Blutes* in the *Archiv für path. Anat.* xii. 81. VIRCHOW: *Cellularpathologie*, 148. BERNARD: *Liquides de l'Organisme*, i. 455, 466-8; and the works already cited of LEHMANN, MULDER, and MILNE EDWARDS.

There is one point, however, which must be noticed. It has been universally held that the coagulation was simply the solidification of the liquid Fibrine. Nor can there be any doubt but that the chief part is played by the Fibrine. Nevertheless, some observations of Claude Bernard tend to show that the blood entirely deprived of its fibrine can and will coagulate. He whipped out all the fibrine from some blood, and found that, even when it was impossible to get any more, the blood subsequently coagulated. He found, moreover, that the blood of the veins from the kidneys contains no fibrine, yet it coagulates. And he reminds us that pancreatic juice sometimes shows a kind of coagulation which cannot be attributed to the fibrine.*

While it thus seems as if blood could coagulate without fibrine, it is known that blood will sometimes not coagulate even when its fibrine may be assumed to be present. Thus Dr Richardson, to whose valuable researches this question is greatly indebted, informs us that "Morgagni had described the blood as quite fluid after death in only four cases: all these were cases in which death ensued from slow arrest of the respiration. Drs Peters, Goldsmith, and Moses, three American physicians, have published a report on the appearance of the blood in 20 cases of death resulting from the excessive use of ardent spirits. In every case the blood was fluid and dark, was of a cherry-juice appearance, and showed no tendency to coagulate. In deaths from narcotic poisons, from delirium tremens, typhoid fever, and yellow fever, the blood is generally described as thin and uncoagulable.' Dr John Davy found the blood fluid and uncoagulable on exposure in cases of drowning, hanging, suffocation from the fumes of burning charcoal, and effusion of blood into the pulmonary air-cells." *

---

* BERNARD: *Liquides de l'Organisme*, i. 418, 456.

I said that we might assume the fibrine of the blood to be present in these cases, although it is certainly allowable to assume that it may not; but in the following curious example there can be no doubt whatever that the fibrine is present. Dr Richardson has observed, that not only is the blood drawn by a leech entirely uncoagulable, but that the bite of the leech seems to affect even the blood remaining in the bitten vessels; since that blood continues to flow much longer from the wound, than from a wound made by the lancet; and this, he thinks, can only be because the wound is not stopped up by the coagulation.

7. *Cause of the Coagulation.*—Why does the blood coagulate out of the vessels, and not in them? The question has frequently been put, and answered in very contradictory terms. In the form in which it is often put, it seems not less idle than to ask why roses have thorns, why the cohesion of iron is greater than that of clay, or why stupid querists are not entertaining companions? Fibrine coagulates because it is the property of fibrine to coagulate, and would always do so spontaneously, were there not some obstacle present. We may study the conditions which assist,

---

* RICHARDSON: *The Cause of the Coagulation of the Blood*, 1858 p. 34.

and the conditions which arrest this tendency, but it is hopeless to inquire into the cause of the tendency.

It is said that the blood would remain fluid were there no fibrine present; but this fibrine has a spontaneous tendency to coagulate, which can only be prevented by the presence of some solvent. What is that solvent? The researches of Dr Richardson satisfactorily establish some points which go very far towards a demonstration of the true cause, namely, the presence of ammonia in the blood. He shows, in the first place, that ammonia *does* preserve the fluidity of the blood, if it be present in quantities amounting to 1 in 8000 parts of blood containing 2.2 per thousand of fibrine. He shows, in the second place, that the blood does normally contain this volatile alkali, which is rapidly given off during coagulation. And he shows, moreover, that the causes which *retard* coagulation are causes which *obstruct* the giving out of ammonia, whereas the causes which *favour* the giving out of ammonia *hasten* the process of coagulation. Finally, he shows that if the vapour arising from blood be caught in a vessel, and then passed through another mass of blood, the coagulation of this second mass is suspended. The numerous and ingenious experiments by which Dr Richardson has established these important propositions must be sought in his work, which gained the Astley Cooper prize.

There still remain some difficulties, however, which are not cleared up by this hypothesis: I refer especially to the cases in which the blood does not coagulate in spite of exposure to the air, and to several of those mentioned by Brücke in the memoir previously cited.

Brücke's hypothesis is, that contact with the living blood-vessels is the necessary condition which arrests the spontaneous tendency to coagulation. The blood of a carp, he says, will remain uncoagulated for twenty-five hours in contact with the walls of the blood-vessel; but if a glass tube be inserted, so as to preserve the blood from contact with the walls, all the blood inside the tube coagulates just as it would in the open air. This does not explain why the blood is incoagulable after death from suffocation, typhus fever, &c. In fact, we have as yet no demonstration of the cause sought, and must await the result of further researches.

8. *Chemical Composition of the Blood.*—Before concluding our description of the blood, we must glance at its chemical composition; for if the microscope reveals it to be far from a simple fluid, chemical analysis further assures us that it contains water, salts, sugars, fats, and albuminates. In spite, however, of numberless analyses made with the greatest care, our present knowledge is only approximative—a rough estimate, and that is all; the excessive difficulty of making an unexceptionable analysis being acknowledged by all who have attempted it. We know tolerably well what the *elementary* composition is—that is to say, how many atoms of carbon, hydrogen, &c. are included in every 1000 parts; but what the *immediate* composition is—that is to say, in what forms these atoms exist in the blood—we do not know so

well. The elementary composition of ox blood, when all its water is removed, is as follows:—

Carbon,	519.50
Hydrogen,	71.70
Nitrogen,	150.70
Oxygen,	213.90
Ashes,	44.20
	1,000.00

The following may be taken as the nearest approach to a table of the substances which form the *immediate* composition of every 1000 parts of human blood:—

Water,		784.00
Albumen,		70.00
Fibrine,		2.20
Cells,	Globulin,	123.50
	Hæmatin,	7.50
Fats,	Cholesterine,	0.08
	Cerebrine,	0.40
	Seroline,	0.02
	Oleic and margaric acid, Volatile and odorous fatty acid, Fat containing phosphorus,	0.80
Salts,	Chloride of sodium,	3.60
	Chloride of potassium,	0.36
	Tribasic phosphate of soda,	0.20
	Carbonate of soda,	0.84
	Sulphate of soda,	0.28
	Phosphates of lime and magnesia,	0.25
	Oxide and phosphate of iron,	0.50

Extract, salivary matter, urea, colouring matter of bile, accidental substances, ...	5.47
	1,000.00

In this table sugar is omitted, yet we know that sugar, in varying quantities, always exists in the blood quitting the liver, where it is formed from albuminous matters, and is also generally found in blood at other parts of the organism ; but, because this sugar rapidly undergoes transformation into other substances, its amount cannot be estimated.

All analyses of the Blood hitherto have been only rough estimates. In fact, the fluid itself is constantly changing. The following table, drawn up by Lehmann,* gives the results of analyses of the solid red-discs, and the fluid or *liquor sanguinis,* separately examined :—

1000 *parts Red Discs are composed of*—

Water, ...	688.00
Solid remains, ...	312.00
Specific weight, . . .	1.0885
Hæmatin, ...	16.75
Globulin and cell membrane, .	282.22
Fat, ...	2.31
Extractive matters, ...	2.60
Mineral substances, excluding iron,†	8.12

---

* LEHMANN, ii. 131.

† The iron is reckoned with the hæmatin.

Chlorine,	1.686
Sulphuric acid,	0.066
Phosphoric acid,	1.134
Potassium,	3.328
Sodium,	1.052
Oxygen,	0.667
Phosphate of lime,	0.114
Phosphate of magnesia,	0.073

1000 *parts Liquor Sanguinis are composed of*—

Water,	902.90
Solid remains,	97.10
Specific weight,	1.028
Fibrin,	4.05
Albumen,	78.84
Fat,	1.72
Extractive matters,	3.94
Mineral substances,	8.55
Chlorine,	3.644
Sulphuric acid,	0.115
Phosphoric acid,	0.191
Potassium,	0.323
Sodium,	3.341
Oxygen,	0.403
Phosphate of lime,	0.311
Phosphate of magnesia,	0.222

But, granting that Chemistry had succeeded in making a perfect analysis, we should still have to bear in mind that all the constituents vary in different individuals, and in different states of the same individual. The blood of no two men is precisely similar; the blood of the same man is not precisely similar in disease to what it was in health, or at different epochs of life.

The iron which circulates in the veins of the embryo, is more abundant than the iron in the veins of the mother; and this quantity declines after birth, to augment again at puberty.

The fats vary, in different individuals, from 1.4 to 3.3 in 1000.

The blood-cells vary with the varying health.

The albumen fluctuates from 60 to 70 parts in 1000, the proportion being greater during digestion.

Tho fibrine, usually amounting to about 3 in a 1000, may rise as high as 7½, or fall as low as 1.

9. *Arterial and Venous Blood.*—Such are the chief points ascertained respecting the blood in general. We must now call attention to the different *kinds* of blood in the different parts of the circulation; for although we speak of "the blood" as if it were always one and the same thing, it is, in truth, a system of various fluids, a confluence of streams, each more or less differing from the other.

The first grand division is familiar to all men—namely, that of venous and arterial blood; the former being dark purple—"black blood," as it is called—the latter bright scarlet.

To many it will seem that this is but a distinction of colour—a distinction so easily effaced, that no sooner does the dark blood come in contact with the atmosphere than it brightens into scarlet. The distinction of colour is, however, the sign of an important difference. Between the two fluids a profound difference exists; and yet the venous blood has only to pass through the lungs in an atmosphere not overcharged with carbonic acid, and at once it becomes transformed into a life-giving fluid. Wherefore? Analysis of the two detects but trifling variations in their solids, the most notable being the larger amount of red-discs and the smaller amount of fibrine in venous blood. But in their gases an important difference is detected. In both there are nitrogen, oxygen, carbonic acid, and ammonia, either free, or combined so feebly that they are easily disengaged. The quantity of nitrogen is much the same in both; that of ammonia probably does not vary, but the oxygen and carbonic acid vary considerably. Indeed, there is a notion current in popular works that venous blood contains carbonic acid, and arterial blood oxygen—*that* being the difference between the two fluids. But the physiologist knows that both fluids contain large amounts of both gases, the difference being only in the relative amounts contained in each. The experiments of Magnus were for a long while held to be conclusive of the opinion that arterial blood contained absolutely *more* carbonic acid than venous blood, although in relation to the amount of oxygen the amount was less; that, in short, it contained more of both gases, but the larger proportion of oxygen gave it its distinction. Recent investigations have considerably shaken this conclusion, but they leave unaltered one result—namely, that arterial blood contains a large amount of carbonic acid, and a still larger amount of oxygen.*

Where does the oxygen come from? The atmosphere. Where does the carbonic acid come from? We do not know. The most generally accepted hypothesis is, that the carbonic acid comes from the oxidation of tissue. On this point, however, the evidence seems to me extremely defective, but as I dare not venture here on the discussion, I will content myself with stating the received opinion, referring the student to Bernard's latest work for some grounds of doubt.† This is the hypothesis: The blood which flows *to* the tissues is scarlet, but in the capillaries it parts with some of its oxygen; and as it flows *from* the tissues it is dark, and will become scarlet again on its passage through the lungs. When we know that arterial blood contains carbonic acid as well as oxygen, the idea suggests itself, that on parting with some of this oxygen it might assume the dark colour, owing simply to the carbonic acid retained; but this idea is set aside by the fact that unless an *exchange* take place, no oxygen will be liberated. The carbonic acid is said to be the product of the vital activity of the tissues, and as such is taken up by the blood in exchange for its oxygen; for if the nerves which supply a limb be cut, and vital activity be thus arrested, the current of blood will not be darkened; precisely as it will not be brightened in its passage through the lungs, if there be a surplus of carbonic acid in the air. The experiments of Bruch* are very instructive on this point. He found that blood saturated with oxygen became darker in *vacuo*, while blood saturated with carbonic acid did not change colour.

---

* On the quantity of gases in the two bloods, see BERNARD, i. 367.

† BERNARD: *Liquides de l'Organisme*, i. 336-346; and compare ROBIN et VERDEIL: *Traité de Chimie Anatomique*, ii. 86 *et seq.*

What causes the change of colour when venous blood is submitted to oxygen? Formerly it was held to be due to the iron in the discs; but the iron may be removed without this removal affecting the phenomenon; so that the opinion now held is that the change of colour is due solely to the difference in the *form* of the discs, which become *brighter* as they become more *concave*, and *darker* as they become more *convex*. Oxygen renders them concave, carbonic acid renders them convex.

Arterial blood is everywhere the same: it is one stream perpetually flowing off into smaller streams, but always the same fluid in its minutest rills as in its larger currents.

Not so venous blood. *That* is a confluence of many currents, each one bringing with it something from the soil in which it arises; the streams issuing out of the muscles bring substances unlike those issuing out of the nervous centres; the blood which hurries out of the intestine contains substances unlike those which hurry out of the liver.

---

* SIEBOLD u. KÖLLIKER: *Zeitschrift für Wissenschaftliche Zoologie*, iv. 273.

Not only is venous blood different in different parts of the body, but it has even differences of colour: it is not always black, it is sometimes scarlet, without, however, ceasing to be venous. The discovery of this curious fact is due to Claude Bernard,* who found that, in the renal veins, during the *activity* of the kidney, the blood is always scarlet, and black during the *repose* of that organ. He has extended his observation to the submaxillary and parotid glands; and the conclusion he draws is this: while the venous blood from the active muscles is always black, the blood from the secreting glands, when active, is always scarlet; and *vice versâ*, the venous blood is scarlet in the muscles when they are perfectly quiet, and black in the glands when they are quiet. This leads Bernard to establish a distinction between the functional and mechanical activity of the glands: when the chemical process of forming the secretion is going on, he considers the gland to be in a state of functional activity, and then its venous blood is black; when the mechanical process of pouring out that secretion is going on, he considers the gland to be in a state of mechanical activity, and then the blood is scarlet. Although his interesting experiments open a new field of speculation, they are far from having satisfactorily established the cause of this change of colour.

---

* *Mémoire lu à l'Académie des Sciences*, 25th January 1858. See his *Leçons sur les Liquides de l'Organisme*, 1859; and BROWN-SÉQUARD'S *Journal*, 1858.

Disregarding these minor variations, we may still keep to the broad distinction of scarlet and black, as characteristic of arterial and venous blood. But these variations help us to conceive how, while arterial blood is everywhere the same, venous blood is everywhere fluctuating in its composition, according to the organs from which it comes.

Wondrously does the complex machine work its many purposes: the roaring loom of Life is never for a moment still, weaving and weaving,

"Geburt und Grab,
Ein ewiges Meer,
Ein wechselnd Weben,
Ein glühend Leben." *

It is difficult for us to realise to ourselves the fact of this incessant torrent of confluent streams coursing through every part of our bodies, carrying fresh fuel to feed the mighty flame of life, and removing all the ashes which the flame has left. Sudden agitation, setting the heart into more impetuous movement, may make us aware that it is throbbing ceaselessly; or we may feel it beating when the hand is accidentally resting on it during the calm hours of repose; but even then, when the fact of the heart's beating obtrudes itself on consciousness, we do not mentally pursue the current as it quits the heart to distribute itself to the remotest part of the body, and thence to return once more—we do not follow its devious paths, and think

---

* "Birth and the grave, an eternal ocean, a changing motion, a glowing life."—*Faust.*

of all the mysterious actions which attend its course. If for a moment we could with the bodily eye see into the frame of man, as with the microscope we see into the transparent frames of some simpler animals, what a spectacle would be unveiled! Through one complex system of vessels we should see a leaping torrent of blood, carried into the depths and over the surfaces of all the organs, with amazing rapidity, and carried from the depths and surfaces through another system of vessels, back again to the heart: yet in spite of the countless channels and the crowded complexity of the tissues, nowhere should we detect any confusion, nowhere any failure. Such a spectacle as this is unveiled to the mental eye alone, and we cannot contemplate it, even in thought, without a thrill.

10. *The Quantity of Blood.*—It is a natural question, and often asked, but difficult to answer, What *quantity* of blood circulates every minute in our bodies?

Anything like an accurate answer to this question is rendered impossible by the fact overlooked by most physiologists, or unknown to them, that the blood necessarily *varies* in quantity every hour. I was surprised to find striking differences in the amount of blood which flowed from two decapitated Tritons of, as nearly as possible, the same size; but on proceeding to open them, I found the one animal was in a state of active digestion, whereas the other had not eaten for a long while. Since this note was made, Claude Bernard has published his experiments on rabbits and dogs, upon which he founds the startling opinion that the blood of the same animal may, during digestion, amount to double the quantity during fasting;[*] for he finds that from a rabbit, during digestion, he can remove 30 grammes of blood without killing it; whereas the same rabbit, fasting, is killed by the removal of 15 grammes. The knowledge of this fact will be very important to surgeons about to perform any operation which entails considerable loss of blood; and it points also to the eminent advantage there would be in giving soldiers a hearty meal before battle.

We thus perceive that no estimate can pretend to be very accurate; nor need we notice those which earlier writers have given: only those of Lehmann, Weber, and Bischoff now command general attention. Lehmann says that his friend Weber aided him in determining the quantity of blood in two decapitated criminals. The quantity which escaped was thus estimated: Water was injected into the vessels of the trunk and head, until the fluid, escaping from the veins, had only a pale red or yellow colour. The quantity of blood remaining in the body was then calculated by instituting a comparison between the solid residue of this pale red aqueous fluid and that of the blood which first escaped. The living body of one of the criminals weighed 60.140 grammes,[†] after decapitation 54.600 grammes, consequently 5.540 grammes of blood had escaped; 28.560 grammes of this blood yielded 5.36 of solid residue; 60.5 grammes of sanguineous water, collected after the injection, yielded 3.724 of solid substances. There were collected 6050 grammes of the sanguineous water that returned from the veins, and these contained 37.24 of solid residue, which corresponds to 1.980 grammes of blood. The estimate, therefore, turns out as follows: 5.540 grammes escaped after decapitation, and 1.980 remained in the body, thus making 7.520 grammes; in other words, the weight of the whole blood was to that of the body nearly in the ratio of 1 to 8.

---

[*] BERNARD: *Liquides*, i. 419.

[†] A *Gramme* is somewhat more than 15 *grains*.

It is obvious from the account of the experiment that only an approximation could be arrived at. And Bischoff's more recent investigations on the body of a criminal, carefully weighed before and after decapitation, lead to the conclusion that the blood amounted to 9¼ lb., or *exactly one-fourteenth of the whole body.** This nearly corresponds with his former investigations, which gave the weight as one-thirteenth of the whole body.

If we say ten pounds for an adult healthy man, we shall probably be as near the mark as possible. The quantity, however, necessarily varies in different persons, as well as in different conditions, and seems from some calculations to be greater in women than in men. In the Seal its quantity is enormous, surpassing that of all other animals, man included.

---

* See his Memoir in SIEBOLD ŭ. KÖLLIKER: *Zeitschrift*, ix. 72. HEIDENHAIN: *Disqu. criticæ et experimentales de sanguini quantitate*, also arrives at a somewhat similar result.

11. *Blood-letting.*—In former days, blood-letting was one of the "heroic arms" of medical practice ; and it is sometimes almost appalling to read of the exploits of practitioners. Haller mentions the case of a hysterical woman who was bled one thousand and twenty times in the space of nineteen years ; and a girl at Pisa is said to have been bled once a-day, or once every other day, during several years. A third case he mentions of a young man who lost seventy-five pounds of blood in ten days ; so that if we reckon ten pounds as the utmost which the body contains at any given period, it is clear that this young man's loss must have been repaired almost immediately. In truth, the blood is incessantly being abstracted and replaced during the ordinary processes of life. Were it not continually renewed, it would soon vanish altogether, like water disappearing in sand. The hungry tissues momently snatch at its materials, as it hurries through them, and the active absorbents momently pour fresh materials into it.

12. *Transfusion.* — In contemplating the loss of blood from wounds or hemorrhage, and in noting how the vital powers ebb as the blood flows out, we are naturally led to ask whether the peril may not be avoided by pouring in fresh blood.

The idea of *transfusion* is indeed very ancient. But the ancients, in spite of their facile credulity as to the effect of any physiological experiments, were in no condition to make the experiment. They were too unacquainted with physiology, and with the art of experiment, to know how to set about transfusion.

Not until the middle of the seventeenth century had a preparation been made for such a trial. The experiments of Boyle, Graaf, and Fracassati, on the injection of various substances into the veins of animals, were crowned by those of Lower, who, in 1665, injected blood into the veins of a dog.

Two years later a bolder attempt was made on man. A French mathematician, Denis, assisted by a surgeon, having repeated with success the experiments of Lower, resolved to extend the new idea. It was difficult to get a human patient on whom the plan could be tried; but one evening a madman arrived in Paris, quite naked, and he was daringly seized by Denis as the fitting subject for the new experiment. Eight ounces of calf's blood were transfused into his veins. That night he slept well. The experiment was repeated on the succeeding day; he slept quietly, and awoke sane!

Great was the sensation produced by this success. Lower and King were emboldened to repeat it in London. They found a healthy man willing to have some blood drawn from him, and replaced by that of a sheep. He felt the warm stream pouring in, and declared it was so pleasant that they might repeat the experiment.

The tidings flew over Europe. In Italy and Germany the plan was repeated, and it now seemed as if transfusion would become one more of the "heroic arms" of medicine. These hopes were soon dashed. The patient on whom Denis had operated again went mad, was again treated with transfusion, and died during the operation. The son of the Swedish minister, who had been benefited by one transfusion, perished after a second. A third death was assigned to a similar cause; and in April 1668 the Parliament of Paris made it criminal to attempt transfusion, except with the consent of the Faculty of Paris. Thus the whole thing fell into discredit, to be revived again in our own day, and to be placed at last on a scientific basis.

It occurred to Majendie that the ill-success of the experiments arose from the supposition that the blood of all quadrupeds was the same, and that it was indifferent whether a man received the blood of another man, or of a sheep or calf. This supposition he thought altogether erroneous. His opinion was, that only the blood of animals of the same species can be transfused in large quantity without fatal results. The blood of a horse is poison in the veins of a dog; the blood of a sheep is poison in the veins of a cat; but the blood of a horse will revive the fainting ass. From this it followed, he thought, that when transfusion is practised on human beings, human blood must be employed; and so employed, the practice is in some urgent cases not only safe, but forms the sole remedy. But the recent investigations of Brown-Séquard have proved that transfusion is successful with the blood of different species. Blundell has the glory of having revived and vindicated the practice of transfusion,* and he has seen his idea amply confirmed. Bérard cites fifteen distinct cases of hemorrhage in which transfusion has saved life.*

---

* BLUNDELL: "Experiments on the Transfusion of Blood," *Medico-Chirur. Trans.* 1818, p. 56.

So startling and so important is this success of Transfusion, that it is very necessary we should distinctly understand in what cases it may with advantage be employed. And these cases are very simple, since it is only when there has been a dangerous loss of blood that any benefit can accrue from transfusion. In all cases of disease it is useless, or worse. The ancients, indeed, thought that by infusing new blood into an old and failing organism, new life would be infused; and wild dreams of a sort of temporal immortality were entertained. Completely as these notions are banished, the initial error of supposing that the blood *forms the organs*—and that if blood be *purified* the organs will be restored to health and vigour—this error is still general, even among men of science. It rests on a misconception of the laws of Nutrition.† Because the organs are nourished by materials drawn from the blood, and because, unless blood be duly supplied, the organs will decay, it has been supposed that the point of departure of Nutrition was in the blood itself, and that the blood formed the organs. It is not so. The organs are, many of them at least, in existence before blood appears;‡ and even afterwards the process of Nutrition always consists in the assimilation of certain materials from the blood by the organs; not in the organisation of this blood itself. In vain will you carry generous food to a sick stomach—it cannot digest the food; in vain will you carry young blood to old organs—they cannot draw their youth from it. The blood is always young, for it is always being renewed. The organs get daily older, and different. Between the blood of an infant, and the blood of a patriarch, no appreciable difference can be found; but how great is the difference between their organs! That which is true of old age, is likewise true of disease. The tissue which is in an unhealthy condition cannot be made healthy by bringing to it a "purer" blood (were such obtainable); it can only be brought back to its healthy condition by the cessation of those causes which keep up the morbid action, and these are not in the blood.*

---

* BÉRARD: *Cours de Physiologie*, iii. 220. It is from this work, and the *Leçons* of MILNE EDWARDS and BERNARD, that all the details on this subject in the text have been taken.

† These laws will be expounded in our final Chapter on LIFE and DEATH.

‡ The young fish *Clypeus* has been observed by Filippi to quit the

13. *Which are the Vivifying Elements?*—Seeing that blood has a power of reanimating the failing body, it is natural we should inquire to which element of the blood this is due—to the cells, or the plasma?

egg and swim vivaciously before there is any trace of circulation—before, indeed, the blood-discs are formed.—*Annales des Sciences*, 1847, vii. 67. If the student desires an easy mode of studying this point, let him carefully watch the development of tadpoles; and he will see, in their transparent tails, how the vessels gradually appear, and how the blood-discs, which at first are in all respects the same as the cells of the general substance, gradually lose their large fat-globules, and assume more and more the character of blood-discs.

* On this extremely important subject the student should weigh carefully the whole of VIRCHOW'S *Cellularpathologie*.

We know that it is only necessary to withdraw blood from a part, or prevent its access by a ligature round the arteries, and the part gradually loses all its vital properties; but even after the rigour of the muscles announces death, we have only to readmit the blood by removing the ligature, and the vitality will be restored.

Unless the circulation be maintained in the nerves, their power almost instantaneously disappears; which proves that in the nerves the chemical changes must be very rapid. Swammerdamm, and others since, have shown this by the experiment of tying the aorta; immediately the circulation is interrupted, the power of voluntary movement disappears. This is only true, however, of warm-blooded animals. Frogs may have the aorta tied, and still possess the power of hopping about for some hours. They will even do this for an hour, when the heart and all the viscera are taken away, according to Stilling.* Schiff thinks that they do this in virtue of the remnant of stored-up force retained in their nerves, and the remnant of blood still retained in the parts.† The difference between frogs and warm-blooded animals in this respect, seems to me solely referable to the difference in the normal rapidity of their nutritive changes. The warm-blooded animal "lives fast," and unless fresh blood be constantly present to supply the waste, the vital changes rapidly cease. The frog can live for months without food, which shows that its nutritive changes are comparatively slow. It will therefore require a much longer time before the interruption of the circulation in a frog will interrupt all manifestation of vitality, than in the case of a warm-blooded animal.

---

* STILLING: *Untersuchungen über die Functionen des Rückenmarks,* 1842, p. 38.

† SCHIFF: *Lehrbuch der Physiologie,* 1858. p. 103.

Every one knows how loss of blood causes man to faint; and how checking the action of his heart instantly produces unconsciousness. Our nervous centres demand incessant supply.

Blood, as we said at starting, is the river of life, and where it ceases to flow, all organic action soon vanishes. But blood is composed of two things—the plasma and the cells, or discs. And we return to the question: Which of these is the vivifying element? It has been ascertained that the plasma of the blood, deprived of its cells and fibrine, has no reanimating power when injected, being in fact not more effective than so much warm water. It has also been ascertained that blood, deprived of its fibrine only, produces the same effect as pure blood; whereby it appears that as neither the plasma nor the fibrine possesses the vivifying power, that power must belong to the cells. This is a great step gained, but the restless spirit of inquiry cannot content itself with such a gain, and it asks, What gives to the blood-cells this specific power? Let us see the answer that can be made to such a question.

We know that the cells (discs and corpuscles) carry the oxygen, either in slight combinations, or free, as in vesicles. We know this, because we find that the blood-plasma is unable to absorb much more than one per cent of its volume of oxygen, whereas the blood containing cells absorbs from ten to thirteen times that amount. The change of colour exhibited by the discs as they take up or give out oxygen, and the fact that, if they are placed in a vessel containing air, they absorb oxygen from that air, whereas the plasma does nothing of the kind, are proofs of the cells being the transporters of oxygen.

But this is not all. The experiments of M. Brown-Séquard seem to establish the important fact that it is to the oxygen carried by these cells that we must attribute their *nutritive* agency, and to the carbonic acid carried by them that we must attribute their *stimulating* agency.*

Blood has two offices: it furnishes the tissues with their food, and it stimulates them into activity. Unless the tissues be endowed with certain vital properties, they cannot be stimulated into activity; and when stimulated, this activity brings about a destruction, which must be repaired. If stimulus be applied without equivalent nutrition, the force is soon exhausted. This double office the blood performs, according to M. Brown-Séquard, chiefly through the oxygen, as the *agent of nutrition,* and of carbonic acid, as the *agent of excitation.*

Without accepting his conclusions in all their absoluteness, we may accept thus much of them, for we see him operating on dead animals, or dead parts of animals, by means of *venous* blood charged with oxygen, and producing therewith precisely the same effects as with *arterial* blood; and we see him showing that arterial blood, charged with carbonic acid, acts precisely as venous blood. The conclusion, therefore, is obvious, that the vivifying difference between the two fluids is simply owing to the difference in their amounts of oxygen.

---

* BROWN-SÉQUARD: *Journal de la Physiologie,* 1858, i. 91.

He takes the blood from a dog's vein, and the blood from its artery, whips both till the fibrine be extracted, and till both have become equally scarlet from the absorption of oxygen. He then injects one of these fluids into the right thigh artery of a dead rabbit, in which the rigidity of death has set in for ten minutes, and the other fluid into the left thigh artery. The result is precisely similar in both limbs, namely, in about five minutes both recover their muscular irritability, which they both retain for twenty minutes. Repeating this experiment with blood drawn from vein and artery, but charged with carbonic acid instead of oxygen, he finds a similar result as to the *exciting* power.

Having thus made clear to himself that, as respects nutrition and excitation, there is no other difference between arterial and venous blood than is assignable to their differences in the amount of oxygen and carbonic acid contained in each; that venous blood, charged with oxygen, acts precisely as arterial blood; and that arterial blood, charged with carbonic acid, acts precisely as venous blood, M. Brown-Séquard proceeds with his demonstration, that unless the blood be highly oxygenated it has *no* power of nourishing the tissues; and unless it be highly carbonised, it has *no* power of stimulating them.

We cannot here afford sufficient space to give any account of the experiments by which these conclusions are reached, and must refer the curious reader to the memoir itself.* But as the idea of the stimulating power of the blood residing chiefly in the carbonic acid, will be novel and startling to most physiological readers, it may be useful to mention one of the experiments. A rabbit was suffocated; and, as usual in such cases, the intestine exhibited very powerful disorderly movements. Into a coil of this agitated intestine he injected some *venous* blood highly *oxygenated.* Immediately the movement ceased. He then injected *arterial* blood highly *carbonised*, and the movements were at once resumed. Again he injected oxygenated blood, and again the movements ceased, to appear on the second injection of carbonised blood. "It is possible," he says, "to produce two conditions of the organism essentially different, one of which consists in the presence of a greater amount of oxygen than usual, both in the venous and in the arterial blood, the other of which consists in the presence of an excess of carbonic acid in both fluids. In the first of these conditions, life ceases in spite of the extreme energy of the vital properties, simply because the stimulating power of the blood is insufficient. In the other of these conditions, the stimulating power, being excessive, causes an activity which is soon spent, because it cannot be reproduced."

---

* *Journal de la Physiologie*, i. 95.

Even should we accept to the full the ingenious hypothesis just propounded, we must guard against an exaggeration of its application. Oxygen may be the one chief *condition* for that exchange between the blood and the tissues which constitutes Nutrition, and without a due supply of oxygen Nutrition may be brought to a stand-still; but we shall greatly err if we suppose that oxidation is itself the process of Nutrition, or that the cells are the sole agents. The albumen, the fats, and the salts which the tissues draw from the blood, are not drawn from the cells, but from the plasma. It is, therefore, quite possible, indeed M. Séquard's experiments render it eminently probable, that the blood-cells, by their oxygen, furnish the indispensable *condition* of Nutrition, the material being furnished by the blood-plasma. It is also probable that the cells, by their carbonic acid, furnish the condition of muscular excitement; so that arterial blood, when containing more than its usual amount of carbonic acid, causes an excess of the stimulating over the repairing processes. This may account for the greater cerebral excitement succeeded by languor, consequent on exposure to the vitiated atmosphere of a theatre, a ball-room, or a lecture-room.

14. *Relation of Blood to Nutrition.*—Such is the wondrous fluid we name Blood, and such its proper-

ties, as far as Science hitherto has learned them. Before quitting our survey, it will be desirable to say a few words respecting the relation which blood bears to Nutrition, since that relation is not generally understood.

Every one knows that all the tissues are nourished by the blood. But in what way is this effected? Blood, in itself, is perfectly incapable of nourishing the tissues—so incapable that, if it be poured on them from the rupture of a vessel, it hinders nutrition, and acts like a foreign substance. Accordingly, we see it rigorously excluded from them, shut up in a system of closed vessels; but as it rushes along these vessels, *certain of its elements ooze through the delicate walls* of the vessels, and furnish *a plasma from which the tissues are elaborated.* In exchange, certain products of waste are taken up by the blood, and carried to the organs of excretion.

An image may render the process memorable. The body is like a city intersected by a vast network of canals, such as Venice or Amsterdam; these canals are laden with barges which carry to each house the meat, vegetables, and groceries needed for daily use; and while the food is thus presented at each door, the canal receives all the sewage of the houses. One house will take one kind of meat, and another house another kind, while a third will let the meat pass, and take only vegetables. But as the original stock of food was limited, it is obvious that the demands of each house necessarily affect the supplies of the others. This is what occurs in Nutrition: the muscles demand one set of principles, the nerves a second, the bones a third, and each will draw from the blood those which it needs, allowing the others for which it has no need to pass on.

This leads us to notice a luminous conception, attributed by Mr Paget to Treviranus, but really due to Caspar Friedrich Wolff, whose doctrine of epigenesis reposes on it;* namely, that "each single part of the body, in respect of its nutrition, stands to the whole body in the relation of an excreting organ." Mr Paget has illustrated this idea with his accustomed felicity.† Every part of the body taking from the blood those substances which it needs, acts as an excretory organ, inasmuch as it removes that which, if retained, would be injurious to the nutrition of the rest of the body. Thus the polypes excrete large quantities of calcareous and silicious earths: in the polypes, which have no stony skeleton, these earths are absolutely and utterly excreted; but in those which have a skeleton, they are, though retained within the body, yet as truly excreted from the nutritive fluid and the other parts as if they had been thrown out and washed away. In the same manner, our bones excrete the phosphates from our blood. The hair in its constant growth not only serves its purposes as hair, but also as a source of removal from the blood of the various constituents which form hair. "And this excretion office appears in some in-stances to be the only one by which the hair serves the purpose of the individuals ; as, for example, in the fœtus. Thus in the fœtus of the seals, that take the water as soon as they are born, and, I believe, in those of many other mammals, though removed from all those conditions against which hair protects, yet a perfect coat of hair is formed within the uterus, and before, or very shortly after birth, this is shed, and is replaced by another coat of wholly different colour, the growth of which began within the uterus. Surely in these cases it is only as an excretion, or chiefly as such, that this first growth of hair serves to the advantage of the individual."

---

* WOLFF: *Theorie von der Generation.* 1764.

† PAGET: *Lectures on Surgical Pathology,* i. 24 *et seq.*

Mr Paget also applies this principle to the explanation of the rudimental hair which exists all over our bodies, and to that of many other rudimental organs, which subserve no function whatever. He also, without apparently being aware of Wolff's ideas on this point, applies it to the explanation of the embryonic phases. "For if it be influential when all the organs are fully formed," he says, "and are only growing or maintaining themselves, much more will it be so when the several organs are successively forming. At this time, as each nascent organ takes from the nutritive material its appropriate constituents, it will co-operate with the gradual self-development of the blood, to induce in it that condition which is essential, or most favourable, to the formation of the organs next in order to be developed."

This principle further enables us to understand how the existence of certain materials in the blood may determine the formation of structures in which these materials are to be incorporated; and it enables us to understand the "constitutional disturbance," or general state of ill health, which arises from some local disturbance, such as a cold in the head; for, "if each part in its normal nutrition is an excreting organ to the rest, then cessation or perversion of nutrition in one, must, through definite changes in the blood, affect the nutrition of the rest."

How evidently the special condition of the organism determines the growth or decrease of certain organs, may best be seen in the sudden development of the beard and the voice at the period of puberty. Birds in the pairing season acquire their most brilliant plumage, and express the tumult of their emotions in perpetual song. Stags at the same epoch develop their antlers, and make the forest ring with their hoarse barking. Mr Paget justly says—"Where two or more organs are thus manifestly connected in nutrition, and not connected in the exercise of any external office, their connection is because each of them is partly formed of materials left in the blood on the formation of the other." *

Does not this throw a new light upon the blood? and do you not therein catch a glimpse of many processes before entirely obscure? It assures us that the blood is not "flowing flesh"—*la chair coulante*—as Bordeu called it, to the great delight of his successors;

---

* PAGET, p. 32.

nor is it even liquid food. It is an organic structure, incessantly passing through changes, which changes are the *conditions* of all development and activity. Food and Drink become subjected to a complicated series of digestive processes. The liquid product of Digestion is carried into the blood-stream, undergoing various changes in its route. It is now blood; but other changes supervene before this blood is fitted for the nourishment of the tissues; and then certain elements pass from it, through the walls of the capillaries, to be finally assimilated by the tissues. In the simpler animals, the liquid product of digestion is itself the immediate agent of Nutrition, and does not pass through the intermediate stage of blood. It escapes from the digestive canal into the general substance of the body, which it permeates and nourishes much in the way that the blood-plasma nourishes the substance of the more complex animals. But in the simplest animals there is not even this approach to blood. There is no liquid product of digestion, for there is no digestion at all, the water in which these animals live carrying organic matter in solution; *this* permeates the substance, and is assimilated: thus does the water play the part of blood, carrying the food, and carrying away the waste.

Let the speculative mind traverse the marvellous scale of created beings upwards, from the simplest to the most complex, and it will observe that Assimilation first takes place by means of the direct relation of the organism to the surrounding medium; next arrives the interposition of agencies which *prepare* the food for the higher effects it has to produce; and instead of relying on organic substances in solution, the organism is seen extracting nutriment from other organisms; finally is seen the operation of still more complicated agencies, which impress on the digested food still higher characters, converting it into blood. This blood is retained in a system of vessels everywhere closed. Yet, in spite of the absence of orifices or pores, it is distributed impartially to the most distant parts of the organism, and it is distributed according to the momentary requirements of each part, so that when an organ is called upon to put forth increased energy, there is always an increase of food sent to supply that energy. If the stomach has been quiet for hours while the brain has been active, the regulating power of the circulation has adapted the supply of blood to each organ; and no sooner will the stomach be called upon to exert itself, than an abundant supply of blood will instantly be directed to it. This simple and beautiful fact in the animal economy should warn men against the vicious habit of studying at, or shortly after, meals, or of tasking the brain when the stomach is also tasked.

CHAPTER V.

CIRCULATION OF THE BLOOD: ITS HISTORY, COURSE, AND CAUSES.

Was Harvey the discoverer of the circulation?—Course taken by the blood—History of seventeen centuries—Three errors removed by Galen, Vesalius, and Colombo—What then remained for Harvey?—Discovery of the valves—Exaggeration of their importance: veins without valves—Discovery of the fact of the circulation—Reception of the discovery by contemporaries—Deficiencies in Harvey's doctrine—Discovery of the capillary vessels: their structure and uses—Discovery of the lymphatics—Harvey's opposition to it—Statement of Harvey's real claims—The cause of the circulation—Influence of the heart; not the sole cause—Rapidity of circulation—Circulation in absence of the heart—Motions of the heart; cause thereof; nerves and ganglia of the heart—The heart continuing to beat after death—Action of the Arteries—Circulation in the capillaries—Draper's hypothesis—Spallanzani's observations—Circulation and Respiration.

Did Harvey discover the circulation of the blood? To many, the question will sound like an impertinence. To those who have critically examined the historical evidence, the question wears another aspect, and their answer will run somewhat thus: Harvey did, and he did *not*, make the discovery; he made a very great discovery, which has given an imperishable glory to his name, but it was not precisely that which is popularly attributed to him. In endeavouring to mark clearly out that which he discovered, and that which he did not discover, no attempt will be made here to diminish the fame England is justly proud of, by ransacking the archives of science to detect stray passages of meaningless vagueness, wherein older authors may have indicated something like the truths which Harvey established on the firm basis of experiment and reasoning. Erudite prejudice has done its worst in this direction, and its worst has only set Harvey's merits in a clearer light.

Harvey discovered the *fact* of the circulation; but he did not discover the *course* of the circulation, nor the *causes* of the circulation. He knew that the blood was carried from the heart through the arteries to the tissues, and from the tissues, through the veins and lungs, back again to the place whence it started. But he knew not *how* the blood passed from arteries to veins; he knew not *why* the blood thus moved. In our day Science is in possession of the exact *course* of the circulation, but the exact *causes* are still under question. We know that the circulating system consists of *heart, arteries, veins, capillaries,* and *lymphatics.* Harvey knew not the capillaries and lymphatics; so that his knowledge of the course taken by the blood was necessarily incomplete.

To put the reader in possession of what is now known on this subject, and to enable an estimate to be formed of what Harvey discovered, we will first take a rapid view of the circulation.

The following diagram will convey a general conception of the course of the circulation :—

Fig. 11.

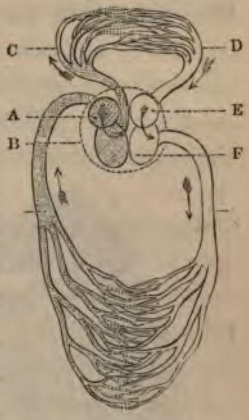


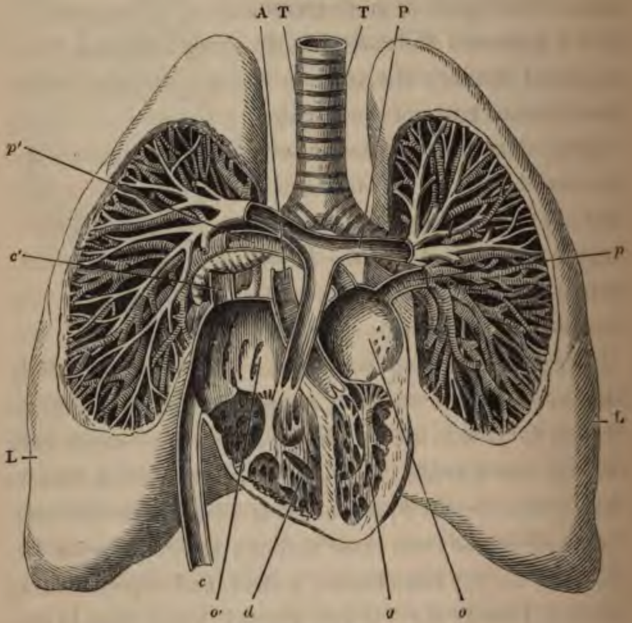
DIAGRAM OF CIRCULATION.

The reader will understand that this figure is a *diagram*, not a *picture:* it represents, in an ideal manner, the relation of the various parts of the circulating system to each other, and shows how a circle is formed by the blood starting from the *right auricle*, A, of the heart, and passing thence into the *right ventricle*, B; from this again it is driven by a strong contraction of the *pulmonary artery*, C, into the lungs; from the lungs it is carried by the *pulmonary veins*, D, back to the *left auricle*, E, of the heart, and from that to the *left ventricle*, F, whence it is poured into the arteries, and passes from these through the *capillaries* (described in our last chapter, p. 241, and represented by dotted lines in fig. 11) into the veins, and thus is once more carried back to the heart.

Such is the diagram, or *theoretic* view, of the circulation. But lest the reader should be misled by this, which is intended to simplify the conception, I will now give a representation of a part of the actual disposition of the circulating apparatus, which he can complete by the aid of the theoretic diagram.

The heart is composed of four cavities, two *auricles* or antechambers, and two *ventricles* or chambers. Into the right auricle (o') the blood enters by means of the two great trunk-veins, the superior and inferior *venæ cavæ* (c' and c). After passing thence into the right ventricle (*d*) it is driven by the *pulmonary artery* (P) into the lungs. This vessel is called an artery although it contains venous blood; for vessels do not receive their names from the nature of the blood they carry, but from the nature of their office: those which carry

Fig. 12.



Heart and Lungs.

blood to the heart are called veins, those which carry it from the heart are called arteries.

In the lungs (L L) the blood comes in contact with the oxygen of the atmospheric air, admitted to the air-cells of the lungs through the windpipe, or *trachea* (T) which branches off, and ramifies through the lungs as *bronchial tubes.* The action of the oxygen changes the blood from venous into arterial.

The blood now returns from the lungs by the *pulmonary veins* (*p p'*) and enters the left auricle (*o*), whence it passes into the left ventricle (*g*). It is then driven into the arteries, through the great arterial trunk, the *aorta* (A), and is by them distributed to the various tissues.

The arterial blood having served its purpose, and having yielded some of its materials to the tissues through which it flowed, has now to return once more to the heart, to be reinvigorated by passing through the lungs. In the diagram we saw this return effected by means of the veins. But there is another system of vessels, different from veins and capillaries, of which no notice is taken in the diagram. This is the Lymphatic system.

The Lymphatics, like the roots of plants absorbing nutriment from the earth, absorb lymph from the various organs in which they are distributed, as we shall learn more particularly hereafter. These lymphatics pour their contents into the venous current, which thus becomes a confluence of streams, all flowing towards the heart.

This is the circuit taken by the blood, from the right auricle of the heart back again to that starting-point.

I°.. STORY OF THE DISCOVERY.—The story of this discovery is one of the most interesting and instructive in the whole range of science, and it has recently been re-written by M. Flourens in a very agreeable style.* He declares that before him no one had accurately narrated it. In some sense this is true; but there are important omissions in his own account; and while availing myself of his labours, I shall endeavour to complete them. It is a story whose episodes extend over not less than seventeen centuries; and the two centuries that have elapsed since the discovery, have not sufficed entirely to complete it. Seventeen centuries is a vast span of time for the elaboration of the discovery of a fact which, now we know it, seems so obvious that the marvel is why it was ever unknown; and the moral of the story lies precisely there, teaching, as it does, the remarkable servility of the mind in the presence of established opinions, and the difficulty which is felt, even by eminent men, in seeing plain facts, when their eyes are hoodwinked by preconceived notions. To those who are unfamiliar with the practical investigation of science, it seems singular that errors, so baseless that they vanish immediately they are challenged, should continue to find believers: and to men who have never trained themselves in the difficult and delicate art of Observation, it seems singular that facts, extremely simple when observed, should continue to be overlooked. But the truth is, observers are at all times rare, because *new* observation requires singular independence of mind; and, unhappily, those who never made an observation themselves, are always ready to dispute the accuracy of new observations made by others.

---

* FLOURENS: *Histoire de la Découverte de la Circulation du Sang*, 1854.

1. *Three errors which masked the truth.*—In the case now before us there were three capital errors, which for seventeen centuries masked the fact of circulation; and the reader will probably learn with surprise what those errors were.

The first error was, the belief that the arteries did not contain blood.

The second error was, the belief that the two chambers of the heart communicated with each other by means of holes in the partition dividing them.

The third error was the belief that the veins carried the blood *to* the various parts of the body.

How was it possible that errors so flagrant as these could have maintained their ground a single day after men began seriously to examine the subject? It was obvious that air entered the body, and entered it by the trachea, or windpipe. The conclusion was natural, in the early days of science, that the air, thus entering by the trachea and bronchial vessels, should continue its course through other vessels. When the arteries of a dead body were examined, they were found empty, and consequently the arteries were chosen as the veritable air-channels : hence their name ("air-containers," from ἀηρ and τηρεω).

What, then, becomes of the air inspired? Galen said it did not enter the parts of the body, but was thrown out again after performing its office, that office being to *cool* the blood. If you open an artery, said Galen, blood will issue, but not air : whence the conclusion seems inevitable, that the arteries do not contain air, and do contain blood. Modern science has proved that atmospheric air is not contained in the arteries, but only its oxygen with a slight amount of nitrogen, and a certain amount of carbonic acid gas. And as the composition of the atmosphere was not suspected in the days of Galen, the presence of blood, and the absence of air, were facts so firmly established by him, that, in spite of all antagonists, they finally assumed the place of incontestable truths.

Here, then, we see one error removed. The others still remained. Galen, and all his successors, maintained that the two chambers of the heart communicated directly by means of holes in their partition; an opinion perfectly intelligible when we learn that it rested on a theoretical assumption. Theory wanted the fact, and men saw the fact they wanted. Theory distinguished between venous blood, and *spirituous* or arterial blood : The venous blood nourishing all the coarser organs, such as the liver; the spirituous blood nourishing all the delicate organs, such as the lungs.

In our day we should demand some proof, before accepting such a theory; but the ancients had a very vague idea of the necessity of proof; and were equally vague respecting the nature of proof: so long as an opinion was logical and plausible, it was held to be irresistible.

The spirituous element was supposed to be formed in the left ventricle of the heart; but inasmuch as even venous blood requires some of this spirit for the purposes of nutrition, it was necessary that the two bloods should mingle; and, to meet this necessity, holes were assumed in the partition dividing the two ventricles. So deeply impressed were anatomists with reverence for what Galen had said, and what theory required, that they one and all *saw* the holes—which do not exist. Berenger de Carpi had, indeed, an uneasy doubt on the subject, which he naïvely expressed in the admission that the holes were only to be seen with great difficulty—*cum maximâ difficultate videntur;* but, by straining the eyes sufficiently, he doubtless saw what Galen required him to see—as thousands daily see what they believe they ought to see. The first man who had sufficient strength of mind to use his eyes, and say what he saw, was Vesalius,* the father of modern anatomy: for whom Titian did *not* draw the figures which illustrate his work.†

---

* VESALIUS: *Opera Omnia,* edit. 1725, i. 519. The first edition of the Anatomy was published in 1543.

† The real artist was Calcar, a pupil of Titian's, called by Vasari, Giovanni Fiammingo. I do not know how the tradition arose which attributes the figures to Titian—(CUVIER, *Hist. des Sc. Nat.,* ii. 21). Vesalius himself names *Johannes Calcarensis* in his preface, and makes no mention of Titian.

Thus was the second error overthrown in 1543. The third error—namely, that of the veins carrying the blood *to* the tissues—was somewhat more complex. If the venous and arterial bloods do not mingle in the heart, where do they mingle? *We* know it is in the lungs that the one passes into the other; but it was an immense discovery to make; and there is something piquant in the fact that it was first divined by a restless and daring theologian, whom Calvin burned, with affectionate zeal, for speculations of another kind.

Michael Servetus was the first to announce the existence of the circulation in the lungs; and he announced this in the *Christianismi Restitutio*, a work which was burned by the theologians. Two copies of this work exist: one, still reddened and partly consumed by the flames, is in the Royal Library of Paris; and copious extracts from it are printed by M. Flourens in his "History." Servetus there describes the passage of the blood from the heart to the lungs, "where it is agitated, prepared, changes its colour, and is poured from the pulmonary artery to the pulmonary vein." *

This idea was as novel as it was true; but the critical reader will probably not agree with M. Flourens in regarding this as a *discovery*, in the strict sense of the term; for although Servetus had some notion of the anatomical evidence furnished by the large size of the pulmonary artery, which enables it to carry a far greater quantity of blood than could be needed for the nutrition of the lungs, yet we have only to read the passages in which he describes this pulmonary circulation to perceive that he had no accurate idea of it: he speaks confidently of the nerves being continuations of the arteries, and describes with great precision how the air passes from the nose into the chambers of the brain; and how the devil takes the same route to lay siege to the soul. All we can say is, that Servetus made one lucky guess among his numerous guesses by no means of the lucky kind. I think it right to insist on this point, because, owing to the rarity of the book in which the guess was promulgated, very few persons have been able to form a correct idea of what Servetus really meant. Thus Cuvier, among others, emphatically asserts that "the physiological phenomenon of the pulmonary circulation is explained in a very clear manner,"* and that Servetus says, "in a positive manner, that the whole mass of the blood passes through the lungs." The copious extracts given by M. Flourens now enable every one to see what Servetus really did assert. He announced the fact of the pulmonary circulation, and may receive from History the whole credit of such priority; he also guessed rightly that in the lungs, and not in the liver, the blood received its elaboration, passing from venous into arterial.

---

* "Fit autem communicatio hæc, non per parietem cordis medium, ut vulgo creditur. Sed magno artificio a dextro cordis ventriculo longo per pulmones ductu, agitatur sanguinis subtilis: a pulmonibus præparatur, flavus efficitur, et a vena arteriosa in arteriam venosam, transfunditur."

But whatever merit may be assigned to Servetus, no influence can be attributed to his discovery, since both he and his treatise were roasted by Calvin; and no one heard of the pulmonary circulation. Six years afterwards, Realdo Colombo re-discovered the pulmonary circulation;* and that the discovery was ready to be made on all sides, is seen in the fact of its being also made by Cæsalpinus, the great botanist, who does not seem to have been aware of what Colombo had written, since he makes no mention of him, and, as M. Flourens observes, *le grand mérite est toujours probe.* Cæsalpinus, moreover, was the first to pronounce the phrase "circulation of the blood."†

---

* CUVIER: *Hist. des Sciences Nat.*, ii. 15.

2. *Discovery of the general Circulation.*—Here the reader may ask, What further remained for Harvey to discover? and it may surprise him to hear the answer: Everything! Such is pretty nearly the fact. The pulmonary circulation takes place only through a small arc of the great circle traversed by the blood. Besides this arc, there is the other greater arc, through which the *systemic*, or general circulation, takes its course; and of this no one, except Cæsalpinus, had even a suspicion. Every one supposed that the veins carried the blood *to* the tissues, and nourished them; no one suspected that this function was reserved for the arteries, and that the veins carried the blood only to the heart. It was thought that the arteries had their origin in the heart, and the veins in the liver; from the liver the veins carried the blood to every part.

---

* COLOMBO: *De re Anatomicâ*, edit. 1572, p. 325.

† CÆSALPINUS: *Quæst. Peripetet.*, edit. 1593, lib. v. p. 125. Flourens gives the passage, as well as that from Colombo.

A single fact, familiar to every surgeon, and to every barber who ever opened a vein, ought to have revealed the error; since every time a ligature was applied, the operator must have seen that the vein swelled *below* the ligature, and not *above* it; from which the deduction seems obvious that the blood in the vein flowed *to* the heart, and not *from* it.

But here, as in so many other cases, familiar facts were not *observed;* they were seen, but not interpreted. Cæsalpinus was the first who observed it; but he has only the merit of having suspected the cause to be the current setting towards the heart.[*] His suspicion was not a demonstration; and we are surprised to find De Blainville saying, "that the circulation was known to Cæsalpinus, although he had not demonstrated it." In Science, the difference between a guess and a demonstration is as great as that between the fame which an unwritten poem may achieve, and the fame which a great poem *has* achieved. If guesses counted as achievements, the temple of fame would be thronged with the statues of heroes.

De Blainville says that the reason why Haller and others have denied the claim of Cæsalpinus, is because they did not read what he had said in his work *On Plants.*[†] Now, if we turn to the passage in question, we shall see how far the writer really was from the truth, and yet how near his guess went to the truth. "In animals, we see the food carried by the veins to the heart, as to a centre of innate heat; and there, having acquired its final perfection, it is distributed over the whole body through the arteries, by the agency of the spirit, which is engendered in the heart by this same food."[*]

---

[*] "Quia tument venæ ultrà vinculum, non citrà. Debuisset autem opposito modo contingere, si motus sanguinis et spiritus a visceribus fit in totum corpus."—*Quæstionum Medicarum*, lib. ii. p. 234.

[†] DE BLAINVILLE: *Hist. des Sciences de l'Organization*, ii. 227—a statement repeated by ISIDORE GEOFFROY ST HILAIRE: *Histoire Générale des Règnes Organiques*, i. 44.

Easy is at is for us to *read into* this passage almost all that we understand by the circulation, a close historical criticism detects in it nothing but a guess; and as Bérard remarks, we ought not to confound two such vague statements as these, themselves requiring demonstration, and by Cæsalpinus himself subsequently contradicted, with the clear ideas, and imposing proofs, on which Harvey established his discovery.[†]

The convincing evidence of Harvey's originality is, that not only was the guess advanced by Cæsalpinus without any influence on the theories of that day, in spite of his deserved authority; but that when Harvey promulgated his theory, he found, all over Europe, the greatest difficulty in getting it accepted. Bérard maintains, that so far from any one before Harvey having had a clear idea of the true theory, no one had even accurately conceived the true theory of *pulmonary* circulation; for although Servetus, Colombo, and Cæsalpinus knew that the blood passed through the lungs, they fancied only so much passed as was necessary for the reception of the " vital spirits,"—a quantity which their predecessors fancied took its course through the holes in the partition of the heart. But they had no conception of the entire mass of blood traversing the lungs; and even had they known so much, they would have been wholly at a loss to say whence it came, and whither it went. It was necessary to understand the whole circulation before any part of it could accurately be understood.

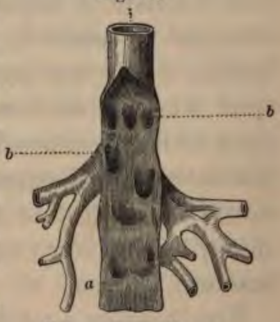
---

[*] CÆSALPINUS: *De Plantis*, i., c. 2, p. 3.—"In animalibus videmus alimentum per venas duci ad cor tanquam ad officinam caloris insiti, et adeptâ inhibi ultimâ perfectione, per arterias in universum corpus distribui agente spiritu, qui ex eodem alimento in corde gignitur."

[†] BERARD: *Cours de Physiol.*, iii. 581. Compare MILNE EDWARDS: *Leçons sur la Phys. et l'Anat. comparée*, iii. 20.

3. *Discovery of the Valves.*—The discovery that the veins had valves, opening and closing like doors, brought the discovery of the circulation within compass. It was made in 1574 by Fabrice d'Acquapendente, under whom Harvey studied at Padua. In the following figure the valves *b b b* are represented in the course of the venous trunk, and at the entrance of the venous branches. These valves, preventing any flow from the heart, but admitting the flow to the heart, might have suggested to their discoverer the true interpretation of their use. But five-and-forty years elapsed before any one arose, who had the sagacity to perceive the real value of this anato-

Fig. 13.



VALVES OF THE VEINS.

mical structure in respect to the blood-currents; and during these five-and-forty years, everything that had been discovered or surmised respecting the circulation, was familiar to every anatomist of the great Paduan school in which Harvey studied: nevertheless, when Harvey promulgated his theory, it was vehemently opposed.

In 1619 Harvey first publicly taught what he had discovered; and in 1628 he published, for the benefit of Europe, his celebrated treatise, *Exercitatio Anatomica de Motu Cordis et Sanguinis,* which may justly be called the basis of modern physiology. That the theory was new, and would be opposed as a heresy, no one more clearly divined than he did.* The greatness of the discovery, and the force of genius required to make it, can only be appreciated by those who, familiar with the state of opinion in those days, read the evidence and arguments by which Harvey established his doctrine. It is true that he appeared at a particular epoch, when the confluence of various discoveries rendered his discovery possible; but that a man of genius was necessary to interpret and co-ordinate those discoveries, is evident in the fact, that no one except Harvey had, for nearly half a century, seen the significance of the facts.

Here, however, a caution must be interposed. The importance of the valves has been greatly exaggerated, and their real bearing on Harvey's discovery misconceived. They are thought to have rendered the discovery facile, because, inasmuch as they prevent the blood from flowing backwards, while permitting it to flow outwards, the idea of the circulation, it is said, must necessarily have emerged from the contemplation of these valves.

---

* "Adeo iis nova erunt et inaudita, ut non solum ex invidia quorundam metuam malum mihi, sed vereor ne habeam inimicas omnes homines, tantum consuetudo aut semel inhibita doctrina, altisque defixa radicibus, quasi altera natura apud omnes valet, et antiquitatis veneranda opinio cogit."—*Exercit.* p. 88.

Against this supposition there is one decisive fact: no one *did* deduce the conclusion which is said to have been so necessary.

Moreover, in many cases, circulation takes place entirely without their aid. There are *no* valves in the veins of the Invertebrata,* *none* in the veins of fishes and reptiles, and *very few* in birds; yet the circulation is as complete in these animals as in man.

Nay, even in man the *chief* veins are destitute of valves, although writers on Natural Theology, and even better-informed physiologists, are in the habit of speaking of them as if they were universal and indispensable: it may, therefore, be useful to mention, that there are no valves whatever in the great venous trunks, the venæ cavæ, and portal veins—none in the hepatic, renal, and uterine veins—none in the brachio-cephalic, spinal, and iliac veins; and they are rarely present in the azygos and intercostal veins.

4. *Harvey's Originality.*—M. Flourens says, that when Harvey appeared everything had been suspected

---

* In the aorta of the *Eolis* there is a semilunar valve.

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
STANFORD UNIVERSITY
MEDICAL CENTER
STANFORD, CALIF.

or indicated, but nothing established. This seems to me even less than the truth, for I cannot ascertain that any one had the slightest conception of the real process.

Acquapendente could make nothing of the valves he had detected. He thought their office was simply to prevent a too great accumulation of blood in the lower parts of the body, and a diminution from the upper parts.

Colombo thought with his contemporaries, that the veins had their origin in the liver, and carried blood to the tissues.

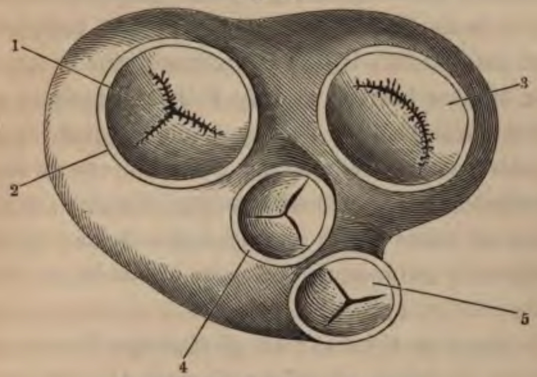
Cæsalpinus, in spite of his recognition of pulmonary circulation, thought the blood also passed from the right chamber of the heart to the left.

But Harvey not only conceived a clear idea of the process, he described it minutely and accurately. He noticed the successive contractions which forced the blood into the ventricle when the auricle contracted, and forced it from the ventricle into the lungs when the ventricle contracted; a process repeated on the left side with the blood which had come in contact with air in the lungs. And at each passage of the blood from one cavity to another, there were the valves, or "little doors" (*ostiola*), opening to let the current pass, and closing to prevent its reflux.

These valves are represented in the following figure, which shows the upper surface of the heart, when the *auricles* are removed :—

Harvey described the course of the blood along the arteries, which he attributed to the pulsations of the heart; and in this, instead of in Galen's "pulsific virtue," he recognised the cause of the blood's movement.

Fig. 14.



VALVES OF THE HEART AND ARTERIES.

Upper surface of the heart, the auricles having been removed.

1. Valve between right auricle and ventricle; 2. Fibrous ring; 3. Valve between left auricle and ventricle; 4. Valve of the aorta; 5. Valve of pulmonary artery.

5. *Reception of the new Doctrine.*—By Harvey the overthrow of ancient authority was completed. Men dared no longer swear by Galen—they swore by Harvey, who had discovered the greatest fact in the animal economy—a fact totally unknown and unsuspected by Galen, or any other ancient. The new era had commenced.

It was not in the nature of things for the old system quietly to accept the new; accordingly, the opposition was loud and vehement. Like many other parts of this history, and like most oppositions to new doctrines, it has been immensely exaggerated by historians, and by writers who have chosen it as a theme for rhetoric. It is true that the Faculty rejected the new doctrine; but it is no less true that eminent men accepted it with enthusiasm. If Guy Patin was caustic in opposition, Molière laughed at Guy Patin's prejudice; and Boileau ridiculed the Faculty. Some anatomists accepted the doctrine, and the great Descartes warmly espoused it.* Swammerdamm and Malpighi, two of the great names of the century, speak of Harvey with reverence; and soon no one spoke of him in any other tone.

6. *Gaps in the Doctrine of Harvey.*—It is impossible to read Harvey's work without the highest admiration for the scientific genius it displays, and the conviction that here the circulation was not only demonstrated, but for the first time conceived. The experiments and arguments by which he establishes the fact are still worthy of study, as models of investigation.

But there were necessary gaps in his doctrine. The

---

* The carelessness with which history is often written, is exhibited in the criticism of M. ISIDORE ST HILAIRE: *Hist. des Règnes Organiques*, i. 49; on the passage in CUVIER, *Hist. des Sciences Nat.*, ii. 53, where Harvey is said to have had the rare happiness of seeing his discovery accepted by Descartes. M. St Hilaire remarks that this is an error, because Harvey died in 1657, and Descartes did not publish his *Traité de l'Homme* until 1662. This remark is doubly unfortunate, Descartes having expressed his adherence to the doctrine in his very first work, the *Discours de la Méthode;* and Harvey having, in his Second Reply to Riolan, expressed his gratification at this flattering approval of Descartes.

course of the circulation was not known to him, could not indeed have been discovered by any instruments at his disposal. He supposed the blood passed from arteries to veins by two paths, either through anastomosis (that is to say, the arteries opening directly into veins), or through the porosities of the parts—*aut porositates carnis et partium solidarum pervias sanguini.* He thought it necessary that so much of the blood as was required by the tissues for their nutrition, should *remain behind* in the tissues, and the rest be carried onwards to the heart. The error is considerable; and its bearing on the theory of the circulation will be appreciated by any one who reflects on the fact that venous and arterial blood being so obviously distinguished, it is necessary that the passage of the one into the other should be demonstrated—not surmised—before the theory of the circulation could be accepted as complete; for any one might reasonably assume that the blood in the veins is altogether another fluid from that in the arteries, and not merely another state of that fluid.

This, indeed, *was* assumed by the adversaries of Harvey, and has found supporters even in our own day. Burdach cites two German physiologists—Willbrand and Runge—whom he thinks worthy of refutation, and who maintained that arterial blood was transformed in a mass into the tissues, and that venous blood was the re-transformed tissues. Unless the passage of the blood into the veins be clearly traced, there can be no reason against supposing that the veins simply absorb from the tissues, in the same way as the lymphatics and lacteals absorb their fluid. To prove that the blood makes a circuit, that circuit must be traced; and Harvey plainly declares that, with all his diligence, he could not succeed in tracing any connection between arteries and veins; in only three places did he find them presenting anything like an anastomosis; in every other place he imagined porosities.

7. *Discovery of the Capillaries.*—Nor, with the means at his disposal, *could* Harvey have traced the complete course of the blood. The Microscope was needed; and the first to employ the microscope in such researches was Malpighi, who, four years after Harvey's death, in 1661, detected those Capillaries which form the channel of communication between arteries and veins. (See fig. 11, p. 293.) He says that, at first, he thought the blood poured out from the minute arteries in streams, without his detecting any vessels for these streams; but afterwards he detected the distinct walls of these vessels; and he describes the modes of examining them in the lung of the frog. Their network arrangement on the pulmonary cells is well described by him.* Nevertheless, in 1668, Leeuwenhoek describes them as if previously they had been quite unknown. "I used every means I could devise," he says, "to see the complete circulation of the blood—namely, that one

---

* MALPIGHI: *Epist. II. de Pulmonibus*, in *Opera Omnia*, ii. 327 of the 4to edition. From the *Opera Posthuma*, p. 9, it appears that the date of this discovery was 1661. I am indebted to Professor SHARPEY for this reference.

of the smallest of those vessels which we call veins, arose from another which is called an artery, and afterwards conveyed its contents to a larger vein; but I found this to be impossible, for when I followed the course of the artery until it became so small as only to admit of one or two globules to pass through it at a time, I then lost sight of it." This was in the wing of a bat; but subsequently he was more fortunate with the tail of a tadpole: "a sight presented itself more delightful than any that my eyes had ever beheld; for here I discovered more than fifty circulations of the blood in different places. I saw that not only the blood in many places was conveyed through exceedingly minute vessels, from the middle of the tail towards the edges, but that each of these vessels had a curve or turning, and carried the blood back towards the middle of the tail, in order to be conveyed to the heart. Hereby it appeared plainly to me that the blood-vessels I now saw in this animal, and which bear the names of arteries and veins, *are, in fact, one and the same*—that is to say, that they are properly termed arteries so long as they convey the blood to the farthest extremities of its vessels, and veins when they bring it back towards the heart." *

Thus, then, was the demonstration of the *course* of the blood completed; and we must confess that it is with surprise we find all historians overlooking the great gap in the doctrine which had been left by Harvey, a gap only filled up by Malpighi and Leeuwenproportion of water. By absorbing its water, lymph leaves the plasma bathing the tissues in a more concentrated state. Lymph is one of the streams which set towards the heart, and join the venous current.

---

* LEEUWENHOEK: *Select Works*, i. 92.

The discovery of the Lymphatics is due to Aselli, Pecquet, Rudbeck, and Bartholin. Anatomists taught that there were three kinds of vessels in the body : the veins, which carried blood ; the arteries, which carried spirituous blood ; and the nerves, which carried "animal spirits." To the surprise of all, the news came that an Italian anatomist, Aselli, had discovered a fourth kind, which carried the chyle. This discovery was announced in 1622—three years after Harvey first announced *his* discovery, but six years before his book was published.

Aselli was dissecting a dog, and, to his surprise, on opening the abdomen he saw a network of delicate white vessels. What could they be? Did they contain the chyle? He pricked one, and, in a transport of delight, exclaimed *Eureka!* as he saw a milky fluid flowing out. But on opening another dog, he was greatly discouraged, for there was not a vessel of the kind to be seen. Had he been deceived? Was his joy premature? In this perplexity it occurred to him that the first dog had been fed a little while before it was opened ; whereas the second dog was fasting. With the insight of genius, Aselli detected here the clue which might lead him to the truth. He fed another dog ; four hours afterwards he opened it, and had the intense satisfaction of once more seeing the milky vessels.

But although Aselli made Europe aware of a new system of vessels, which he named Lacteals, he failed to trace their issue. He thought they conducted the chyle to the liver.

In 1648, a French anatomist, Pecquet, distrusting the conclusions of that "mute and frigid science," as he calls the dissection of dead bodies, determined to seek the truth in the living organism, and began a series of vivisections. He was rewarded by the discovery of the course taken by the chyle in the lacteals, as it passes into the Reservoir, still named after him, and along the Thoracic Duct, to be poured into the subclavian vein, and thence, mingled with the blood, into the heart.

In 1650, Rudbeck, a young Swede, discovered the lymphatics in the liver, and their connection with the reservoir of the chyle.

In 1652, Bartholin, another Frenchman, completed this discovery by finding the lymphatics in the viscera and limbs, and by tracing them into a common trunk.

These discoveries, following in such quick succession, greatly disturbed the equanimity of the Faculty, whose members swore by Galen, and could not tolerate the idea of the ancients being supposed to have overlooked anything. "Un chacun invente à present!—Everybody must needs be a discoverer nowadays," was the indignant sarcasm of Riolan, the most renowned teacher of that day—the only adversary whom Harvey condescended to answer, and of whom he stood in such awe, that, even when answering his attacks, he declares the book which contains those attacks "will live for ever, and when marble shall have mouldered, will proclaim to posterity the glory which belongs to your name."*

Harvey knew indeed of the existence of the lacteals, and says that he had observed them before Aselli published his book. But he denied that they contained the chyle, and he is twitted by Riolan for his disbelief. In consequence of this, a tradition has come down, that Harvey showed the same spirit of opposition towards the novelties of others, as was shown by others towards the novelties he advocated; but this is a mistake. If the reader will turn to Harvey's letter to Dr Morison of Paris, he will see a very circumstantial and temperate exposition of the objections which Harvey felt against the notion of the lacteals conveying the chyle: many of these objections are of great force, and still remain unshaken. His chief error is in supposing that the fluid in the lacteals is milk. But he insists very properly that it should be demonstrated that this fluid is really chyle brought from the intestines, and that it supplies nourishment to the whole body; "for unless we are agreed upon this point, all discussion is vain." Subsequent investigations have cleared up what was obscure, and have shown that the lacteals convey lymph mingled with fat, and that the lymphatics convey whatever they can absorb from the tissues, in which they are imbedded like the roots of a tree in the earth. The lacteal and lymphatic streams are confluent with the great venous streams, and thus form parts of the circulation.

---

* *Exercit. de Circul. ad Riolanum*, 1649; last paragraph.

It may now be convenient to state in a few brief sentences the results of all these discoveries, and the course taken by the circulation. For this purpose, let us cast a glance at the disposition of the organs represented in figure 15, on the following page.

The Food having become chyle in the intestines, is from them carried to the heart by these two courses:

1°. The system of *portal veins* (*Vp*) which conduct the chief mass to the liver; from the liver, the chyle, now become Blood, passes along by the inferior vena cava to the right auricle of the heart (*h*).

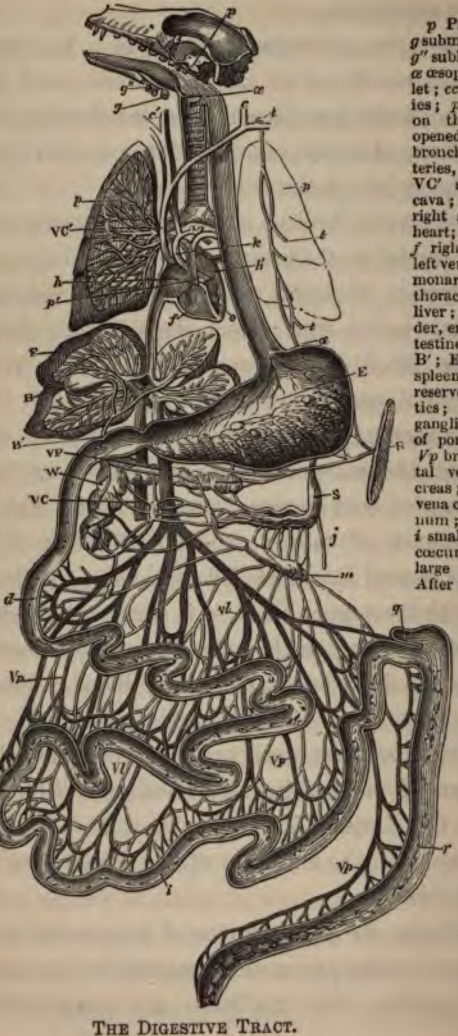
2°. The system of *Lacteals* (*Vl*), which conduct the fluid through the mass of mesenteric ganglia, *m* (not to be confounded with nervous ganglia), to the Reservoir of Pecquet (*S*) along the thoracic duct (*t*, *t*), whence it is poured into the subclavian vein, and there mingling with the venous blood, it is afterwards carried to the heart and through the lungs to be arterialised.

Thus the Food reaches the heart as Blood. From the heart it takes the course already described.

The arteries carry the blood to all parts of the body by a system of subdividing branches, the twigs of which are Capillaries. Through the walls of these capillaries some of the elements of the blood pass to nourish the tissues.

The Capillaries are continuations of the arteries, and the veins are continuations of the capillaries (or more correctly speaking, the capillaries are intermediate

Fig. 15.



p Parotid gland; *g* submaxillary gland; *g''* sublingual gland; *œ* œsophagus or gullet; *cc* carotid arteries; *pp* lungs, that on the left being opened to show the bronchial tubes, arteries, and veins; VC' superior vena cava; *k* aorta; *h* right auricle of the heart; *h'* left auricle; *f* right ventricle; *o* left ventricle; *p'* pulmonary artery; *tt* thoracic duct; F liver; B gall bladder, entering the intestine by the duct B'; E stomach; R spleen; S Pecquet's reservoir; *j* lymphatics; *m* mesenteric ganglia; VP trunk of portal vein; *Vp Vp* branches of portal vein; W pancreas; VC inferior vena cava; *d* duodenum; *Vl* lacteals; *i* small intestine; *q* cœcum; *r* colon, or large intestine. —After Bernard.

THE DIGESTIVE TRACT.

vessels uniting these two). Into the veins that portion of the blood enters which has lost its arterial character in the passage through the capillaries. Into the veins also the Lymphatics pour their fluid, which is partly the unused plasma of the blood absorbed from the tissues, and partly the products of waste in the tissues. When the Lymphatics arise from the intestines they are called *Lacteals*, or chyliferous vessels, and carry some portions of the digested food, as well as lymph. This compound of altered blood, unused plasma, wasted tissue, and food, forms venous blood, and is carried by the innumerable veins, ramifying all over the body, to two great venous trunks, the *venæ cavæ*, inferior and superior (*Vc* and *Vc'*), which pour the whole mass into the right auricle of the heart.

9. *Harvey's Claims.*—From the preceding exposition of the march of discoveries, it is clear that Harvey did not discover all that *we* mean by the circulation of the blood; but he discovered the great fact, that the blood does circulate, propelled from the heart along the arteries, and back to the heart and lungs through the veins.

Having thus shown that he did not discover the whole *course* of the circulation, we have now to show that he did not discover its whole *cause*. Before doing so, it will be interesting to remark, that in one important respect he was behind Servetus, for he thought that the blood returned to the heart, as to a fountain, there to receive the additions necessary to its perfection — *tanquam ad fontem sive ad lares corporis,* *perfectionis recuperandæ causa reverti.* Servetus correctly stated that it was in the lungs, and not in the heart, that this perfection was attained. Instead of perceiving that arterial blood acquired its bright colour by its exposure to the air, Harvey maintained that this colour was owing to the lighter part being "strained" from the heavier in its passage through minute openings. "In blood-letting, when the blood forcibly escapes to a distance in a full stream, it is thicker and darker; but when flowing from a small orifice drop by drop, it is brighter because it is then strained, and the thinner portion alone escapes." We know that the difference is owing to a more perfect exposure of the whole mass to the air when it issues slowly in drops, and *that* is why the blood is then of a brighter hue. Harvey, having no suspicion of this atmospheric influence, is driven to ingenious devices to explain the change of colour. "In the lungs," he says, "it is more florid than in the arteries, because it is strained through the pulmonary tissue." His notion of the office of the lungs was, that they served to *cool* the blood, "and prevent it from boiling up."

II°. CAUSE OF THE CIRCULATION.—What is it which causes the blood to circulate? "The heart," answers an unhesitating reader. That the heart pumps blood incessantly into the arteries, and that this pumping must drive the stream onwards with great force, there is no doubt; but although the most powerful agent in the circulation, the heart is not the sole agent; and the more we study this difficult question, the more our doubts gather round the explanation.

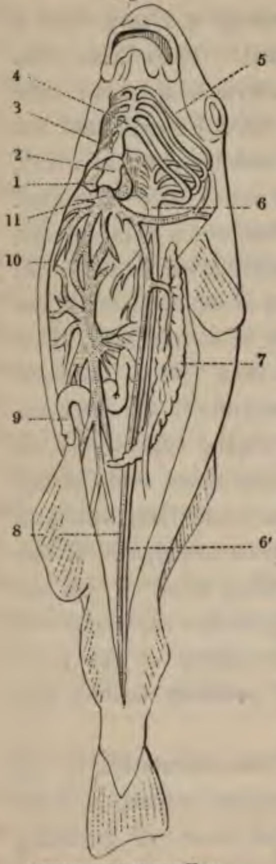
1. *Circulation in the absence of a Heart.*—Let a few of the difficulties be stated. There have been cases of men and animals born without a heart; these "acardiac monsters" did not live, indeed could not live; but they had grown and developed in the womb, and consequently their blood must have circulated. In most of these cases there has been a twin embryo, which was perfect; and the circulation in both was formerly attributed to the heart of the one; but it has been fully established that this is not the case. Further, Dr Carpenter reminds us that "it has occasionally been noticed that a degeneration in the structure of the heart has taken place, during life, to such an extent that scarcely any muscular tissue could at last be detected in it, but without any such interruption to the circulation as must have been anticipated if this organ furnishes the sole impelling force."* On the other hand, an influence acting on the capillaries will give a complete check to the action of the heart although that organ is itself perfectly healthy and vigorous.

Professor Draper conceives that circulation in the liver is peculiar, since a complete circuit is there performed by the blood, yet no heart, or pulsating organ, is found in that circle; the small vessels which belong to the intestine converge into a large trunk, and this portal vein on entering the liver ramifies over it in the manner of an artery—that is to say, it branches and branches into the minutest subdivisions, and terminates in capillaries; these once more converge into venous trunks, and carry the altered blood from the liver. Here is a complete circle, analogous to that larger circle which traverses the whole body. But this circulation is dependent on the primary impulsion given by the heart; and Prof. Draper would have to show that without the heart the circuit would still be performed, before he could claim the liver as an illustration of his views. He also refers to the circulation in the fish.

---

* *Human Physiology*, p. 249.

Fig. 16.



CIRCULATION IN THE FISH.

1. Auricle; 2. Ventricle; 3. Arterial bulb: 4. Artery of the gills; 5. Vessels of the gills; 6 6'. Aorta or dorsal artery; 7. Kidney; 8. Vena cava; 9. Intestine; 10. Portal veins; 11. Large venous sinus.

The fish has a heart, but that heart only drives the blood into the gills; it does not suffice for the rest of the body—it is a pulmonary, not a systemic heart. This will be understood by reference to the following figure, which represents the circulation in a fish.

The blood, propelled from the auricle into the ventricle, is aerated in the capillaries of the gills, and descends through them into the aorta, *not* into the heart; and from the aorta it passes to the rest of the body, from whence it returns through veins to the heart.

Thus we perceive that in the fish, although the blood performs a complete circuit, it only once enters the heart; whereas in the mammal it twice enters the heart, going to and returning from the lungs. The following *theoretic* diagram (copied from Milne-Edwards like the preceding) may assist the reader in forming a distinct conception of the fish circulation.

This diagram should be compared with that at p. 293, in order to detect the important differences between the circulation in the fish and the mammal.

Fig. 17.

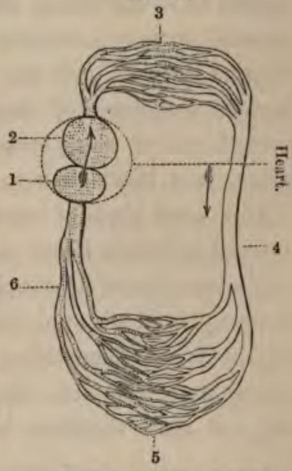


DIAGRAM OF CIRCULATION IN THE FISH.

1. Auricle; 2. Ventricle; 3. Vessels of the gills passing into arteries; 4. Arterial system passing at 5 and 6 into the venous.

It is possible to meet these difficulties, but the objections to the Harveyan doctrine do not end here. The heart may be removed in cold-blooded animals, and the capillary circulation will continue for some time, in spite of that removal. This has been observed more than once; and although I had myself observed it some time ago, yet, in preparing these pages for publication, I again investigated the point; and for this purpose removed the heart of a Triton, with as much care as possible, and found the circulation going on in the tail for some minutes afterwards; nor did it entirely cease on separating the tail from the body.*

While the fact was thus indubitable, I had many doubts as to the cause. But the fact is enough for our present purpose; and that it is also true of warm-blooded animals may be inferred, since after death various processes of secretion, and some even of *growth* (as of hair, beard, &c.), are known to take place; and this seems to imply capillary circulation. "After most kinds of death," says Dr Carpenter, "the arterial system is found, subsequently to the lapse of a few hours, almost or completely emptied of blood; this is partly, no doubt, the effect of the tonic contraction of the tubes themselves; but the emptying is commonly more complete than could thus be accounted for, and must therefore be partly due to the continuance of the capillary circulation. It has been observed by Dr Bennet Dowler, that in the bodies of individuals who have died from yellow fever, the external veins frequently become so distended with blood, *within a few minutes* after the cessation of the heart's action, that when they are opened the blood flows in a good stream, being sometimes projected to the distance of a foot or more. It is not conceivable that the slowly-acting tonicity of the arteries could have produced such a result as this; which can scarcely therefore be attributed to anything else than the sustenance of the capillary circulation by forces generated within itself."

---

* A curious fact connected with this investigation may here find a place. Having some doubts as to the cause of the continued circulation, I proceeded to repeat the experiment with another Triton; but no sooner was the thorax opened than I was seized with a sudden giddiness and faintness, which caused me instantly to throw open the window, and breathe energetically for some minutes; and, of course, to give over the experiment. I should have fainted away, had not the remembrance of a passage in Mr BUCKLAND'S *Curiosities of Natural History* warned me of the danger. He describes a similar effect as having arisen during his dissection of a Triton recently dead. Another note-worthy circumstance is, that the effect is by no means constant. I have dissected scores of Tritons, but this was the only occasion on which any effect was perceptible.

2. *Rapidity of the Circulation.*—Those who have never watched with attention the circulation in the capillaries, may perhaps imagine that the mere force of the heart which propels the blood into the gills, will suffice to propel it also through the general circuit. They will see the heart of the fish beating vigorously, and will imagine these pulsations suffice. But this will no longer seem so plausible, if we place the tail of a tadpole, or the foot of a frog, under the microscope, and delight ourselves with the wondrous spectacle. We shall immediately perceive that the blood flows with far greater rapidity in the arteries than in the capillaries; we shall note that, although the heart continues its vigorous pulsations, and the blood in the arteries advances in regular leaps, the currents in the capillaries are very irregular, sometimes momently arrested, and even reversed. Instead of the *leaping rush*, we perceive an *unsteady flow*,

which is never
flow in the arte

This slacken
be an important
though precise
such cases, we
only approaching
equally fortified
rate is enormo
rushes at the rate
laries only an

What does th
the heart has
rapid rate, there
ring in the capil
force to *restore*

Not further
stand on these
to be incomple
many important

---

* This is Valentin
the capillaries
arterial current

† The force of
mine, that the
the principle of
sectional area of
Where a river wid
it narrows.
greater than
other cause to
objection destroys
tion in the capill

rom *Suffocation.*—We have seen that a cur-
l air prevents carbonic acid from being nox-
the quantity be very considerable; and it is
ount that coal, coke, candles, gas, &c. can be
our apartments without injury. But it is
n know that a current of fresh air will not
vent death from suffocation. It is important
hat there is no absolute safety in the fact of
eing ventilated; the mere presence of car-
will not cause suffocation in such a room,
pily the carbonic acid is frequently accom-
oxide of carbon, and it is to *this* we must
hose accidents which have occurred in manu-
when the workmen, seated at tables under
e was burning, have fallen back suffocated.
cites a case of asphyxia which occurred in a
e of the window-panes of which was broken,
current of air must have circulated in it. In
hopkeeper of Paris was found suffocated in his
ough the room in which he slept was over the
ommunicating with it by an open staircase, and
p had its windows, opening on the street, im-
closed. In spite of this free access of air, the
vapours from a stove in which coke and coal
urning, suffocated him.

is a great spoiler of the air; but it has the merit
g timely warning of the danger, by the horrible
which accompanies its escape. This smell is per-
e when there is only one part in a thousand parts
omes very offensive when the proportion is

which is never at any time equal in rapidity to the flow in the arteries.

This slackening of the capillary current is held to be an important point in the present discussion. Although precise estimates are excessively difficult in such cases, we need accept the estimates yet made as only approaching the truth, and the argument is equally fortified by them, for the difference in the rate is enormous: in the main arteries the blood rushes at the rate of a *foot* per *second;* in the capillaries only an *inch* per *minute.*[*]

What does that indicate? It indicates that, when the heart has driven the blood along the arteries at a rapid rate, there is a considerable *retardation* occurring in the capillaries, which must call for some new force to *restore* the rate.[†]

Not further to multiply examples, we may take our stand on these, and pronounce the Harveyan doctrine to be incomplete, since it fails altogether to account for many important phenomena. Whatever influence the action of the heart may exert, it is not the sole cause of the circulation, but only *one* of the causes. But before attempting to assign the other causes, let us see the part actually assignable to the heart.

---

[*] This is Valentin and Weber's estimate. Draper makes the rate in the capillaries an inch in three minutes, which would imply that the arterial current was 2160 times more rapid than the capillary current.

[†] The force of this argument is destroyed by the remark of a friend of mine, that the slackening of the capillary current may be explained on the principle of Hydraulics, that "if in any part of a closed current the sectional area of the current is increased, the velocity is diminished." Where a river widens, its velocity slackens, and is recovered again where it narrows. The total sectional area of the capillaries being much greater than that of the arteries supplying them, there is no need of any other cause to explain the retardation and recovery of the velocity. This objection destroys the force of the argument derived from the retardation in the capillaries, but it does not touch the other arguments.

3. *The Motions of the Heart.*—The motions of the heart consist in the alternate contractions and relaxations of its muscular walls. The process is this: The two antechambers (*auricles*) suddenly contract; immediately afterwards, *but while the auricles are still contracted,* the two chambers (*ventricles*) also contract, having been powerfully expanded by the rush of blood from the auricles. This contraction is named the *systole* of the heart. It continues for a moment, and is followed by a relaxation of the two auricles, which is immediately succeeded by the relaxation of the two ventricles. This relaxation is named the *diastole.**

During each beat, two sounds may be heard; one dull, which may be imitated by pronouncing the word *lubb;* the other, quickly succeeding it, has a sharper sound, like *dup.* The former sound is supposed to be due to the contraction of the muscular fibres of the ventricles, and the thump of the heart against the chest; aided, no doubt, by the rush of blood and the closing of the valves. The latter sound is caused by the shutting of the semilunar valves of the aorta and pulmonary artery.

---

* Although Harvey describes the process correctly, Haller, and, until quite recently, all succeeding writers, described the contraction of the auricles as coincident with the relaxation of the ventricles. The movement is really wave-like, and the contraction passes on from one cavity to another before the relaxation supervenes.

4. *The Pulse.*—The number of pulsations varies greatly, not only between different sexes and different individuals, but at different ages and conditions of the same person. The following table shows the average at several epochs :—

	Beats per Minute.
In the fœtus in utero, . .	150 to 150
Newly-born infant, . .	130 „ 140
During the 1st year, . .	115 „ 130
During the 2d year, . .	100 „ 115
During the 3d year, . .	95 „ 105
From the 7th to 14th year, .	80 „ 90
From the 14th to 21st year, .	75 „ 85
From 21st to 60th year, .	70 „ 75
Old age, ...	75 „ 80

These figures open a wide field for speculation, especially when coupled with the differences noticed between the sexes, the female having greatly the superiority over the male in respect of frequency, her pulse beating from ten to fourteen times a minute beyond that of man. It must be remembered, however, that a quick pulse and a strong pulse are very different things. The rate of the pulse varies at different periods of the day, gradually diminishing from morning to night, and notably declining during sleep. It is quickened during exercise and digestion. It is slower when we lie down than when we sit, slower when we sit than when we stand.*

---

* A valuable collection of details respecting the frequency of the pulse will be found in MILNE-EDWARDS: *Leçons,* iv. 56 *et seq.;* and BERNARD: *Liquides de l'Organisme,* i. 221.

5. *Cause of the Pulse.*—What is it causes the beating of the heart? Haller and his school attributed it to the irritability of the muscular walls, which are stimulated by the presence of the blood. There is this fact in favour of such an hypothesis, namely, that *after* the heart has ceased to beat, and its irritability is extinct, a little arterial blood injected into it will cause it instantly to resume its pulsations. This, however, is met by another fact, that the heart continues to beat long after it is empty of all blood.

Nor is the common statement correct, that the heart *retains* its irritability longer than any other muscle; I have found the tail and lower extremities of a Triton preserving their irritability, and, indeed, almost all their vital properties, several hours after the heart had ceased to beat: and Budge found the amputated leg of a Frog retain its irritability as long as the heart.*

Not, therefore, by the possession of any greater irritability is the heart distinguished from other organs, but by the possession of a power of spontaneous contraction, such as they do not manifest. Other muscles will contract if some stimulus be applied, but they remain quiet so long as they are undisturbed. The heart does not remain quiet. Remove it from the body, and you will see its rhythmic pulsations continuing almost as if it were within a living breast. Cut it lengthwise into two halves, and each half will continue beating.* Cut it across, through both auricles and ventricles, and both sections will beat as before.

---

* DONDERS: *Physiologie der Menschen*, i. 49.

This is one of the spectacles that assail the mind of the anatomist with somewhat of a tremulous awe. The beating of the heart, which from his childhood he has learned to associate in some mysterious manner with life and emotion, he here sees occurring under circumstances removed from all possible suggestions of emotion or life. What mean those throbbings? They are not the equable movements of Life; they are not the agitations of terror; they are not the impulses of instinct. Dead and destroyed is the wondrous mechanism of which this heart but lately formed the mainspring; and yet, beside the inert body lies this beating organ, as if in the expiring agonies of struggle.

Why is this? For many years no explanation could be given. We now know that in the substance of the heart there is a complete little nervous system, consisting of ganglia and nerves.† This system is not made up of the nerve-filaments which come from the *pneumogastric* nerve. It is a system belonging to the heart. Ganglia are to be found at the base of the auricles and ventricles. The *auricular septum* of the frog's heart is the best place in which to study these ganglia, because its transparence permits microscopic investigation, without any preparation, which might alter the natural disposition of the parts.[*] In mammals the ganglia may be found on the surface of the auricles; and according to Remak, who may be considered the discoverer of this ganglionic system,[†] they are also on the surface of the ventricles. Todd and Bowman,[‡] however, declare they could not find them in the ventricle of the calf. I was equally unable to find them in that of a pig, a mole, a mouse, a cat, and a kitten; and Eckhard[§] saw fibres, but no ganglia, in the septum of the tortoise. It is probable, therefore, that there are considerable variations in the distribution of these ganglia; but the fact of their existence is enough for us.

---

* Harvey was acquainted with this fact.

† In Chapter VIII. the reader will learn what is meant by ganglia; for the present it is enough to say they are the nerve-*centres*.

From these ganglia nerves are distributed through the muscular substance. That it is to this nervous apparatus we are to ascribe the spontaneous activity of the heart is easily proved; for if any part be severed from all connection with the ganglia, the pulsations cease at once in that part; but if any part be severed which still retains a ganglion, the pulsations will continue. The movements during life or death are thus seen to be due to the ganglia.

---

[*] Few, I think, who examine a ganglion thus, can resist the conclusion that the fibres pass beside and round the cells, but are *not* all in direct connection with them. I never saw any but "apolar cells" in these ganglia; and three very eminent anatomists have assured me that they also have failed to detect a single cell in direct connection with a fibre. If these negatives do not affect the positive statement of those who say they have seen such cells in connection with fibres, at least they establish the fact that this connection is by no means *necessary*. For my own part, attentive study of the nervous tissue in every class of the animal kingdom, has convinced me that the theoretical conception of cells being necessarily in direct connection with fibres is untenable.

[†] Remak in *Müller's Archiv*, 1844.—Compare also Lee: *On the Ganglia and Nerves of the Heart*, Philos. Trans., 1849.

[‡] Todd and Bowman: *Physiological Anatomy*, ii. 342 (where the two previous references are given).

[§] Eckhard: *Beiträge zur Anat. u. Physiol.*, p. 151.

But why these ganglia retain their power after the circulation has been destroyed, and why a similar power is not observable in other ganglia, still remains a problem. It seems certain that the power is only retained during the continuance of those molecular changes which we vaguely name vital; for if the heart be subjected to the influence of foreign gases, or be dipped in oil, its pulsations suddenly cease: on the contrary, if arterial blood be injected long after the cessation of all movement (provided decomposition has not commenced), the contractions are resumed.* It has been observed to beat in an exhausted air-pump; which excludes the idea of the atmosphere being the stimulus that sets it going.

The heart pulsates in the embryo long before it contains blood, and long before any nerves have been developed in it—when, indeed, it is nothing but a mass of cells. Nor have we any evidence of the existence of nerves in those pulsatile sacs which constitute the hearts of the simpler animals: not only is there no evidence of such a structure, but all the evidence is decidedly against our supposing that these pulsatile sacs derive their contractions from nervous influence.

---

* Harvey says that one day, after the heart of a pigeon had ceased to beat, he placed his finger on it wetted with saliva, and in a short time, under the influence of this "fermentation," as he calls it, the heart recovered its vigour, and both auricles and ventricles pulsated.

Here the reader probably thinks he sees a flagrant contradiction in our statements. We first do our utmost to show that the heart contracts only under nervous agency, and we then quietly assert that the embryonic heart, no less than the heart of various animals, is under no such agency whatever, yet it pulsates with a vigour not to be gainsaid.

But the contradiction is only apparent. The student of Physiology must expect to meet with such at every stage of inquiry. Extending his investigations into the vast field of animal life, he will gradually learn that Contractility is one of the vital properties of tissue, which may be excited by *various* stimuli. We happen to know with tolerable certainty, that, in the heart of the complex animal, the stimulus acts through the agency of a nervous system; in the embryonic heart of that animal, or in the permanent heart of simpler animals, we do not know the agency by which the stimulus is conveyed, nor do we know what the stimulus is.

Before quitting this beating heart, we may remark, that while on the one hand the pulsations are not in themselves evidence of life, on the other hand their cessation is no evidence of death, but only one among the many signs of death.

When death follows on a long or painful illness, the irritability of the heart vanishes almost with the vanishing breath; but if the decease be sudden, the heart will continue beating for some time afterwards. Harless observed it beating in the body of a decapitated murderer one hour after the execution. Margo found the right auricle beating two hours and a half after the execution, although not a trace of irritability could be detected in the other parts of the heart. Dietrich, Gerlach, and Herz, found that both ventricles contracted, if one were irritated, forty minutes after death.* Remak observed the rhythmic contractions in the hearts of birds and mammals two days after death; and Em. Rousseau mentions that a woman's heart had these rhythmic movements seven-and-twenty hours after she had been guillotined.

It is not always, indeed, that the pulsations cease even when the death has been gradual. Vesalius had a terrible experience of it. That great anatomist, who had nobly braved so much odium because he would not, as his predecessors had done, content himself with the dissection of animals, but suffered his scalpel to traverse the complexities of the human frame, one day opened the body of a young nobleman, whose medical attendant he had been, to ascertain, if possible, the cause of his death. Imagine the horror which ran through all present at the sight of the heart still equably beating! Vesalius was accused of having dissected a live man; nor was the accusation unreasonable in those days. He had to appear before the Inquisition, and narrowly he escaped with his life. A pilgrimage to the Holy Land was his punishment; but he never outlived the scandal created by this unfortunate occurrence.

---

* DONDERS: *Physiologie*, i. 49.

6. *Action of the Arteries.*—Having made ourselves acquainted with the action of the heart, let us now inquire into its influence on the circulation. Every time the blood is pumped into the arteries a pressure is exerted, the force of which is estimated at *thirteen pounds.* This pressure, being on a column of liquid, it will, by the known laws of hydrostatics, not only drive that liquid onwards, but will also cause a great *lateral* pressure, and thus distend the arterial tubes. These tubes are eminently elastic, owing to the elastic tissue of their outer walls. They are also eminently contractile, owing to the muscular tissue of their inner walls. The elasticity is a physical property, and continues after death. The contractility is a vital property, and vanishes with the disappearance of the molecular changes of Nutrition.

Although the arteries are elastic and contractile throughout their whole length, they are so in varying degrees: the elasticity decreases, and the contractility increases, as the vessels become smaller in calibre. What follows? Why, that when fresh blood is impetuously poured into them from the heart, it dilates them; and no sooner is the pressure taken off by the reopening of the ventricles, than muscular contraction once more restores the arteries to their former size, and in so doing forces the column of blood onwards.

gummy glutinous liquid. And just as in the pores of a bladder, or in those of any pervious mineral, pure water will drive out gum water, and occupy the pore, so will the ascending sap expel the gummy solution from the capillary tubes or intercellular spaces of the leaf. As fast as this takes place the active liquid becomes inactive, by itself changing into a gummy solution, and the movement is perpetuated. And this ensues not only in the leaf, but in every part of the plant; *the liquid to be changed presses upon that which has changed, and forces it onwards.*"

The motion of the blood depends on the same principle. The arterial blood, charged with oxygen, passes to all parts of the body in search of organic particles, for which it has affinity. No sooner is this affinity satisfied, than the blood becomes venous, and is pressed onwards by the eager column behind. "In my view of this subject, it is therefore the arterialisation of the blood in the lungs which is the cause of the circulation. I consider the circulation as the consequence of respiration; and though, in one sense, the minor causes are numerous, each portion of nervous material, each muscular fibre, every secreting cell, working its own way—these subordinate actions are all referable to one primordial act, and that is, the exposure of the blood to the air." Professor Draper then refers to the fact that whatever interferes with respiration, interferes with circulation. If an unbreathable gas is thrown into the cells of the lungs, the passage of the blood is instantly arrested, and suffocation occurs. If the access of air be prevented, as in drowning, in vain will the heart throb convulsively—the blood is not driven forward.

Professor Draper's hypothesis, then, is briefly this: the arterial blood has an affinity for the tissues, which causes it to press forwards in the capillaries; and no sooner is that affinity satisfied, than the blood becomes venous, and is pressed forward by the advancing column. In the lungs, venous blood presses forward to satisfy its affinity for the oxygen which is in the air. Having satisfied this, and become arterial, it is pressed on by the advancing column.

If the reader will station himself at the door of a theatre, and watch the column of eager playgoers struggling to get to the money-takers, he will see an image of the forces of the circulation. Each visitor is anxious to put down his half-crown in exchange for a ticket. No sooner has he satisfied that "affinity," than he finds himself pressed forward by the man behind him, still in a state of unsatisfied affinity; and so the rush continues. An image is not an explanation, but it may render an hypothesis more intelligible; and having attempted to make Professor Draper's hypothesis intelligible, we will add, by way of criticism, that it has one serious defect. It rests on the notion of chemical affinity, yet chemical affinity acts only at *insensible* distances, and here the distances are *sensible.* That liquids should circulate in a tube, when one of them has a greater affinity than the other for the walls of that tube, is not evidence that the liquids will circulate in a tube in virtue of an affinity supposed to exist between one of them and the tissues *outside* the tube, because these tissues, being at sensible distances, cannot exert their affinity. If instead of "affinity" we substitute "leakage"—if we remember that the action of endosmose is necessarily set up between the blood and the tissue-plasma, the hypothesis may be more acceptable.

Spallanzani, in his celebrated *Mémoires sur la Respiration*, relates that, when snails were confined in vessels, and had absorbed all the oxygen from the contained air, the movement of their lungs ceased, and with it ceased all movement of the heart—the circulation was arrested. He had only to remove the top of their shells, which could be effected without injury, and the phenomenon was easily watched. By keeping a snail thus confined, at a temperature gradually diminishing, the gradual diminution of the respiration and circulation became very evident. When the temperature fell to zero, the heart ceased to beat altogether, and the blood was stagnant in the veins. In this state of suspended animation the animal was kept for several hours; but on raising the temperature, the lungs began once more to inflate, the heart to beat, the blood to circulate; and, as in the palace of the Sleeping Beauty, all was vivid activity where a minute before all was the image of death.

> "The hedge broke in, the banner blew,
> The butler drank, the steward scrawl'd,
> The fire shot up, the martin flew,
> The parrot scream'd, the peacock squall'd,

> The maid and page renew'd their strife,
> The palace bang'd, and buzz'd, and clackt,
> And all the long-pent stream of life
> Dash'd downward in a cataract." *

The same effect of torpor was produced by the absence of oxygen and the absence of heat. Spallanzani placed a snail in a vessel containing mephitic gas. In eleven minutes the heart was still, and remained so during five hours. On reintroducing atmospheric air the lungs once more began to move, and life returned. To prove that it was the oxygen of the air, and nothing else, which caused this reanimation, Spallanzani repeated the experiment, substituting nitrogen gas for atmospheric air, as the replacer of the mephitic gas; but no movement was visible. Thus it appeared that the animal ceased to breathe because it had ceased to absorb oxygen. It ceased to absorb oxygen under two conditions—when there was none present in the air, and when the temperature was too low—the absorption of oxygen being always in a direct ratio to the temperature; and under both conditions the cessation of the absorption of oxygen was followed by the arrest of the circulation.

Viewing the Circulation in connection with Respiration, we see many arguments favourable to Professor Draper's hypothesis; but that there are some difficulties not easily reconcilable with that hypothesis, cannot be denied. For the present, however, it is enough to have mooted the question, and to have touched on

---

* TENNYSON.

some of the difficulties in the way of our accepting the heart as the sole agent in propelling the blood. "The relation between the interspaces of the capillaries, and the blood thus introduced to them, continues the current. The oxidising arterial blood has a high affinity for those portions that have become wasted; it effects their disintegration, and then its affinity is lost. The various tissues require repair; they have an affinity for one or other of the constituents of the blood; they take the material they need, and their affinity is satisfied; or secreting cells originate a drain upon the blood, and the moment they have removed from it the substance to be secreted, they have no longer any relation with it. So processes of oxidation, of nutrition and secretion, all conspire to draw the current onwards from the arteries, and push it towards the veins."*

We have now brought to a close our survey of the course and cause of the Circulation, and assigned to each labourer in this difficult field of research his share in the work. As an episode in the History of Science, the discovery of the circulation will always command the interest of readers; and if the foregoing sketch has had the good fortune to secure the attention of any medical readers, we hope it may have the further effect of inducing them to go carefully through the immortal works of WILLIAM HARVEY.†

---

* DRAPER, p. 145.

† HARVEY's works have been ably translated by Dr R. WILLIS, and published in one volume by the Sydenham Society.

Several times in the course of our exposition we have been forced to allude to the passage of the blood through the lungs, and the changes there impressed on it. Indeed, without such changes blood could serve no purpose in the organism. Respiration is the mainspring of animal existence. In the next chapter we shall attentively examine it.

CHAPTER VI.

RESPIRATION AND SUFFOCATION.

Two suicides—Suffocation of seventy-two persons on board the "Londonderry"—History of our knowledge of respiration—The air we breathe—Distinction between respiration as an Animal Function and as a Property of Tissue—Oxygen the life-giver—Varnished eggs will not develop; tail of a tadpole developing after separation from the body—The breathing-mechanism in various animals—The process of breathing—Tight-lacing—Alterations of the air in respiration—Necessity of ventilation—German taverns—How the organism accustoms itself to bad air—Effect of bad air in depressing the vital functions—Respiration a vital, not a physical, problem—Suffocation: various forms of—Carbonic acid not a poison—Oxide of carbon a poison: its effects on the blood—Deaths by suffocation: escape of gas: drowning—Respiration not a process of oxidation—The balance of nature—Trees not beneficial in streets—Varieties of animal respiration—Respiration during sleep—Effect of temperature on respiration—Why do we breathe?

A FEW years ago a young Frenchman, named Déal, finding his hopes of making a figure in the world were daily becoming more chimerical, resolved to die; and that he might not quit the world without producing some "sensation," he left this written account of his dying moments:—"I have thought it useful, in the interest of science," he wrote, "to make known the effects of charcoal upon man. I place a lamp, a candle, and a watch on my table, and commence the ceremony. It is a quarter past 10; I have just lighted the stove; the charcoal burns feebly.

"Twenty minutes past 10: the pulse is calm, and beats at its usual rate.

"Thirty minutes past 10: a thick vapour gradually fills the room; the candle is nearly extinguished; I begin to feel a violent headache; my eyes fill with tears; I feel a general sense of discomfort; the pulse is agitated.

"Forty minutes past 10: my candle has gone out; the lamp still burns; the veins at my temples throb as if they would burst; I feel very sleepy; I suffer horribly in the stomach; my pulse is at 80°.

"Fifty minutes past 10: I am almost stifled; strange ideas assail me. . . I can scarcely breathe. . . I shall not go far. . . There are symptoms of madness. . .

"Sixty minutes past 10: I can scarcely write. . . My sight is troubled. . . My lamp is going out. . . I did not think it would be such agony to die. . . 10. . ." Here followed some quite illegible characters. Life had ebbed. On the following morning he was found on the floor, a corpse.

A few hours later, she whom he loved, and who loves him, hears of this rash act, which annihilates even hope. In her despair she flings herself into the dark and sullen Seine. The next morning a corpse is exposed at the dreadful Morgue. The casual spectator gazes on it with undefinable awe, as he thinks of the stillness of that wondrous organism, which but a few hours before was so buoyant with life. Where is all that mystery now? The body is there, the form is there, the wondrous structure is there, but where is its activity? Gone are the graceful movements of those limbs, and the tender sweetness of those eyes; gone the rosy glow of youth; gone the music of the voice, and the gaiety of the heart. The mystery of Life has given place to the mystery of Death.

What has thus suddenly arrested the wondrous mechanism, and, in the place of two palpitating, vigorous beings, left two silent corpses? The cause seems so trifling that we can only marvel at its importance, when revealed in the effect; it was the same in both cases, in spite of the difference of the means: that which killed the one, killed the other; the fumes from the charcoal pan, and the rushing waters of the Seine, interrupted the exchange of a small quantity of gases, and by preventing the blood from getting rid of its carbonic acid, in exchange for an equivalent of oxygen, the fervid wheels of life were suddenly arrested.

To get rid of its carbonic acid for an equivalent of oxygen—that is to say, to make a slight exchange of gases—seems a very trifling process; and only the impressive lessons of tragic experience can persuade men that this process is extremely important. Every child knows that we must have air to breathe; every one knows how unpleasant it is not to have *fresh* air to breathe; but the mass of mankind have no conception that air which is *not* fresh, is as bad as poison.

A very painful illustration of this ignorance is afforded by the calamity which occurred on board the "Londonderry," a steamer plying between Liverpool and Sligo. On Friday, 2d December 1848, she left for Liverpool, with two hundred passengers on board, mostly emigrants. Stormy weather came on, and the captain ordered every one to go below. The cabin for the steerage passengers was only 18 feet long, 11 feet wide, and 7 feet high. Into this small space the passengers were crowded; they would only have suffered inconvenience, if the hatches had been left open; but the captain ordered these to be closed, and—for some reason not explained—he ordered a tarpaulin to be thrown over the entrance to the cabin, and fastened down. The wretched passengers were now condemned to breathe over and over again the same air. This soon became intolerable. Then occurred a horrible scene of frenzy and violence, amid the groans of the expiring and the curses of the more robust: this was stopped only by one of the men contriving to force his way on deck, and to alarm the mate, who was called to a fearful spectacle: seventy-two were already dead, and many were dying; their bodies were convulsed, the blood starting from their eyes, nostrils, and ears.

The cause of this tragedy was owing to the ignorance of the captain and his mate. They had never learned the vital importance of fresh air. They had never been taught, that air which has once been breathed, cannot be breathed over again without injury; never been taught the fact, that air which has once passed to and fro in the lungs is vitiated, and that vitiated air is as bad as poison.

It is the same cause, acting with milder force, which makes the faces pale of those who issue from a crowded church, and gives a languor to those who have sat for some hours in a theatre, concert-room, or any other ill-ventilated apartment, in which human beings have been exhaling carbonic acid from their lungs. A breath of fresh air quickly restores them, and after breathing this fresh air, during a walk home, they scarcely feel any evil results of the late partial suffocation. Had the young man's door been burst open, and fresh air admitted to his room, or had the girl been rescued from the river, and made to breathe within a few minutes after her plunge, or had the hatches been broken open in time, all these victims would have been finally restored, as our concert-goers are restored; and the concert-goers, if kept much longer in that ill-ventilated room, would have perished, as the others perished.

Among the earliest experiences of mankind must have been the necessity of fresh air for the continuance of life; but the complete explanation of the fact, in all its details, is a scientific problem, the solution of which only began to be possible when Priestley discovered the gases of which the air is composed, and the relation these bear to the organism; nor is the problem even now entirely solved, in spite of the labours of so many illustrious men. We have learned much, and learned it accurately; but the difficulties which still baffle us are many and considerable. The ancients really knew nothing of this subject; nor did the men of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries lay any solid foundation-stone. *That* was laid by Priestley, when he discovered the oxygen contained in atmospheric air to possess the property of converting venous into arterial blood. Lavoisier carried out this discovery, and founded the chemical theory of Respiration. Goodwyn (1788) applied the new views to Asphyxia (Suffocation), showing, by a series of experiments, that when air was excluded, venous blood remained unchanged; and when it remained unchanged, death inevitably followed. Bichat concluded from a number of striking experiments, that an intimate relation existed between Respiration, Circulation, and Nervous Action; he showed how the access of venous blood to the brain stopped its action, and subsequently stopped the action of the heart.* Legallois extended these observations to the spinal chord. But by far the most brilliant investigations on the subject of Respiration are those of Spallanzani, whose *Mémoires* still deserve a careful study, both as models of scientific research, and as storehouses of valuable facts. He was succeeded by W. F. Edwards, whose *Influence des Agens Physiques sur la Vie* (which may be found on the old book-stalls for a couple of shillings) still remains one of the best books the science can boast of. During the present century, hundreds of physiologists have devoted labour to the elucidation of the various difficulties which darken this subject, and a vast accession of valuable facts has been the result. The chief points which have been cleared up we may now endeavour to exhibit.*

---

* Claude Bernard has recently shown that venous blood is *not* poisonous, although incapable of sustaining life; and that Bichat's experiments consequently must be otherwise interpreted.—BERNARD, *Liquides de l'Organisme*, i. 507-18.

1°. *The Air we breathe.*—In Respiration there are two objects to be considered, namely, the Air which is breathed, and the Breathing-mechanism. This air, which no man can *see*, is nevertheless a very material substance. We stuff cushions with it; and the chemists analyse it into well-known substances. It forms an atmospheric ocean forty-five miles in depth, surrounding our planet, and whirling with it, as it whirls around the sun. It is an ocean subject to incessant fluctuations, or tides, as we may call them. Like the other ocean it carries a variety of substances in its restless currents, but preserves a constant composition of its own, not affected by these substances. It is chiefly composed of two gases—Oxygen, which forms about one-fifth, and Nitrogen, which forms nearly the remaining four-fifths; that is to say, there are twenty-one parts of Oxygen to seventy-nine parts of Nitrogen. But besides these, there is always a *fraction* of carbonic acid gas even in the purest atmospheric air: at ordinary elevations there are about two parts of carbonic acid in 5000 parts of air; so that we may reckon this gas as forming the $\frac{1}{2500}$ of the atmosphere. There are also traces of ammonia, but they are very slight.

---

* In the following works will be found most of the facts cited or alluded to in our exposition:—SPALLANZANI: *Mémoires sur la Respiration;* EDWARDS: *De l'Influence des Agens physiques sur la Vie;* CLAUDE BERNARD: *Leçons sur les Effets des Substances toxiques;* MILNE EDWARDS: *Leçons sur la Phys. et l'Anat. Comp.;* LEHMANN: *Physiologische Chemie;* Dr JOHN REID's article *Respiration* in the *Cyclopædia of Anat. and Phys.;* and the Treatises on Physiology of BÉRARD, MÜLLER, VALENTIN, LONGET, FUNKE, and DRAPER, already cited.

The air of inhabited rooms, or of caves and dungeons, although constantly *tending* towards the standard of composition, is, of course, subject to great variations. The respiration of animals and plants, and the decay of organic matters, incessantly alter the composition of the air in these places, and unless these alterations be quickly counteracted by free access of fresh air, the result is an atmosphere *injurious* or *unbreathable.* The air is vitiated by its proportion of oxygen being lessened, and its carbonic acid increased. It may be vitiated by other causes, such as the presence of injurious gases and effluvia, but the chief cause is the one just named.

When we breathe, and burn candles, or lamps, in a room, the breathing and the burning have a similar bad effect on the air, robbing it of oxygen, and loading it with carbonic acid; there is neither breathing, nor burning of candles, without these effects. When Dalton analysed the air of a room in which, during two hours, fifty candles had been burning, and five hundred persons breathing, he found that instead of the proportion of carbonic acid being only two gallons in five thousand of air (which would have been the proportion in the air of the street), it was not less than one gallon in every hundred! This air would soon have become unbreathable. Leblanc analysed the atmosphere of three hospitals in Paris, and found that it contained five, ten, and twelve times as much carbonic acid as the air of the streets.

2°. *The Breathing-mechanism.*—Before describing the organs by which we breathe, it will be necessary first to define what is meant by breathing. It will perhaps strike some readers as an idle question, to ask What is Respiration? And yet until a distinct answer to that question is given, there can be no philosophical comprehension of the present subject; and as the purpose of these pages is to furnish philosophical students with material for reflection, no less than to furnish explanations of vital processes, we must endeavour to answer this question.

Reduced to its simplest terms, Respiration appears to be nothing more than the interchange of carbonic acid and oxygen, which takes place between the blood and the atmosphere. Our analysis comes down to this; and yet we shall be led into error if we accept this as the true answer to our question: for this is the *physical fact* implied in the process, it is not the *vital function* itself. This physical fact is not only manifested by the breathing apparatus, but by every tissue in the body, even when it is separated from the body. Take a fragment of muscle, rid it of its blood, and leave it exposed to the atmosphere; it will absorb oxygen, and give out carbonic acid. But no one would say that the muscle breathed; because breathing is an animal function, not a mere interchange of gases: a function dependent upon this interchange, but dependent *also* on the organic apparatus which performs it. We are thus led to distinguish between Respiration as the *Function of an apparatus of organs*, and that interchange of gases which is merely a Property of the tissues.

In the higher animals we see this Function performed by two different organs—gills and lungs. In both organs we find that a large quantity of blood is exposed to the air by means of a network of vessels spread over the surface. The blood arrives there black, and passes away scarlet. It has exchanged some of its carbonic acid for some of the oxygen of the air; it has become changed from venous into arterial blood. This *oxygenation of the blood* is therefore the special office of Respiration; and although all animals exhale carbonic acid and absorb oxygen—although every tissue does so—yet we must rigorously limit the idea of Respiration, as an animal Function, to that which takes place in the gills or lungs. True it is, that the simpler animals effect such exhalation and absorption by their *general surface*, and not by any *special modification of it*—such as gills or lungs; true it is, that even fish and reptiles, furnished with gills, also respire by their skin; and that, when the lungs of a frog are removed, the necessary oxygenation of the blood may be effected through the skin, if the temperature be low; nay, it is also true, that even man himself, in a slight degree, *respires by the skin;* so that the student tracing upwards the gradual complication of the organic apparatus, and finding, *first,* the whole of the general surface effecting the aëration needed; *secondly,* a part of the surface formed into a gill, in which aëration is far more active; and, *finally,* finding this gill replaced by a lung, may be tempted to say, "If the aëration of the blood is the office of Respiration, and if this is effected in some animals by the skin alone, in others by the skin and the gills, and in others principally by the lungs, but still in a slight degree also by the skin, how can you pretend to establish a distinction, other than a simple distinction of degree; how can you expect me to lay much stress on a verbal difference such as that between Function, and general Property of tissue?"

In reply to this plausible objection, we must observe that in science verbal distinctions are often extremely important; they keep attention alive to real, though subtle, distinctions. It is difficult to keep to such distinctions, for, as Bacon says, "words are generally framed and applied according to the conception of the vulgar, and draw lines of separation according to such differences as the vulgar can follow: and when a more acute intellect, or a more diligent observation, tries to introduce a better distinction, words rebel." In strict physiological language, no animal without blood ought to be said to *breathe;* for Respiration in such animals is not effected by a special apparatus of breathing organs; and in physiology *the idea of Function is inseparably connected with that of Organ,* as the Act is with its Agent. Professor Bérard says that, penetrated with the idea of a special organ being necessary for Respiration, he experienced a singular disappointment in reading the experiments of Spallanzani, which proved that every tissue of the body absorbed oxygen, and gave out carbonic acid; and he "only recovered his contentment on perceiving that the essence of Respiration consisted in this interchange of gases, so that, wherever a nutritive fluid was in contact with the atmosphere, Respiration must take place." Here the professor seems to us to have made an oversight, confounding the general with the particular, as completely as if a savage visiting England, and observing the transport of men and goods by railways, and "penetrated with the idea of a special method of transit being necessary," were afterwards to observe that vans, carts, and wheelbarrows also conveyed goods, from which he would conclude that the essence of transport being the removal of goods from one place to another, every means of transport must be a railway. The interchange of gases, like the transport of goods, may be effected by various means, but we only call the one Respiration, when it is effected by gills or lungs; and the other Railway transit, when it is effected by Railways. Professor Bérard was right in conceiving that a special organ was necessary for Respiration; and his error arose from confounding the *action of the organ* with the *result of that action.* Respiration effects interchange of gases, and the aëration of the blood, by means of a peculiar organic apparatus, without which the due aëration would not take place in the higher animals. In the simpler animals this apparatus is not needed, because the nutritive fluid, being easily accessible, requires no apparatus to bring it into contact with the air; but no sooner does the organism become so complex that a direct aëration of the nutritive fluid ceases to be possible, than an apparatus is constructed, the function of which is to effect this aëration. In the gills and lungs we see such an apparatus.

Unless distinctions like these are established, Respiration ceases altogether to be a vital process; and every interchange of carbonic acid and oxygen, no matter where effected, will have an equal claim to be designated as a respiratory act. Therefore, as it is of the first importance in all physiological inquiries to keep constantly in view the part played by the organism in modifying physical laws, the philosophic reader will see at once that any verbal distinction which aids us in this must be of advantage.

If now we ask, What is Respiration? the answer will be this: *The function of the lungs or gills, by means of which the blood absorbs oxygen, and parts with carbonic acid and some other noxious elements.* Oxygen is the great inciter of vital changes; its presence is the indispensable condition of life. It is at once fuel and flame: it feeds, and it destroys: constantly withdrawn from the blood by the ceaseless activities of vital change, it is as constantly drawn into the blood by the process of Respiration. If the blood rushing through our lungs does not meet there with a supply of oxygen, the torrent carries to the tissues venous in lieu of arterial blood, and the consequence is an arrest of all the vital changes. If in passing through the lungs the blood only meets with a small supply of oxygen, an imperfectly arterialised fluid is carried to the tissues, and a partial arrest takes place, which is seen in the diminished vigour of the organism: all the functions are depressed; and if this depression continue, death arrives.

That oxygen does play this life-giving part, is familiar to all readers; but I will here cite two illustrations for the sake of their intrinsic interest. The chick inside its shell develops only when the air can penetrate the pores of that shell. If a varnish be rubbed over the surface of the shell, development is arrested; and although it appears that even varnish does not utterly prevent the penetration of gases, yet it so considerably diminishes it that the chick cannot develop. It is noticeable, moreover, that the precise point at which the development ceases, is that of the establishment of the first circulating system, when the vascular area begins to form. If one of these varnished eggs be freed from its varnish, and once more placed under the hen, it will develop.* Here we observe the absence of oxygen causing a complete arrest of vital changes. In the following case we shall see the reverse, namely, vital changes going on under free access of oxygen, with no other stimulus that can be detected. The case is so remarkable that I have thought it right to verify it by repeating the experiments several times.

---

* See DARESTE: *Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie*, 1857, p. 101-120.

Spallanzani, and after him numerous physiologists, found, that if the tail of a tadpole were cut off, it grew again rapidly. M. Vulpian thought of inquiring what became of the tail thus cut off? and he found that not only did it live many days, but it exhibited activity and development: it wriggled when touched, or when exposed to the air, and it developed new parts, as well as new forms.* I cannot say that I was fortunate enough to observe all the curious facts recorded by M. Vulpian; but respecting the main fact, namely, that the cells daily pass from their rudimentary state into that of actual muscle fibres, vessels, and pigment cells —in a word, that a regular process of development takes place—I can confirm his statement. These tails separated from the organism are without food, and the means of procuring food; yet the free access of oxygen is sufficient for a time to keep up the process of vital change.

To absorb oxygen is an animal necessity. The Blood, which is the great agent of Nutrition, must constantly be supplied with oxygen from the air.

It matters not whether the animal lives in air or in water—the real respiratory medium is always the air—

---

* See BROWN SÉQUARD'S *Journal de la Physiologie*, i. 803.

for water, deprived of its air, or of its due proportion of oxygen, is as fatal to aquatic as to terrestrial animals. It matters not by what organ or surface the respiratory exchange takes place, it is always a twofold act of exhalation of carbonic acid on the one hand, and of absorption of oxygen on the other.

The variety of respiratory organs is great. In the Molluscs we find some kinds having no "organs" at all; some kinds having gills, others having lungs, and one kind (*Oncidium*) having both gills and lungs. In the Crustacea we find rudimentary gills. In spiders there are both gills and lungs. Fish have only gills. Frogs, toads, tritons, and salamanders begin life with gills, which disappear and give place to lungs. Reptiles, birds, and mammals, have lungs of different degrees of complexity.

Animals are said to breathe by their skin when the air, either in the water or as atmospheric air, comes in contact with the moist skin in which the blood is circulating.

Gill-Respiration is effected in a similar way: the water, rushing over the delicate surface, parts with oxygen, and takes up carbonic acid.

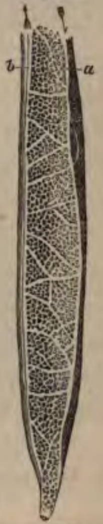
In *Lung-Respiration* the air is no longer outside, but inside the organ: it is drawn in from the atmosphere; the exchange is effected *in* the organ, and the altered air is then driven out, to be replaced by fresh air.

To understand the mechanism of Pulmonary Respiration, let us commence with an examination of the

Water Newt (*Triton*), which presents us with the simplest form of the lung, and will therefore best enable us to understand the more complex forms. On opening the chest of this Newt, recently caught from a neighbouring pond, we observe two elongated air-sacs of thin membrane: these are the lungs.

Let us remove one of these sacs, and place it under the microscope. This is what we see: A delicate membrane, down one side of which we observe the pulmonary artery *a*, and running up the other side, the pulmonary vein *b*; between these trunks, we observe smaller branches and innumerable capillaries, the meshes of which are indicated by the white spots.

Fig. 18.

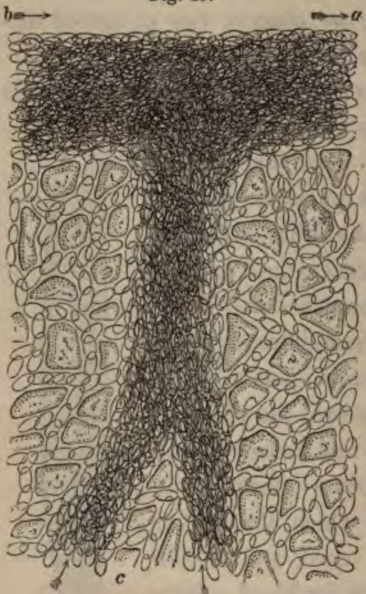


Lung of Triton (after Wagner).

After the air has entered the windpipe it passes into this sac, and there comes in contact with the delicate blood-vessels, through the walls of which the oxygen passes freely into the blood, and the carbonic acid passes out of the blood. How will the air, which is now in the sac, and which is vitiated by the presence of carbonic acid, and the loss of oxygen, be got rid of, to make way for fresh air? Simply by a contraction of the animal's abdominal muscles. If you watch a live Triton in a glass-jar of water, you will see this contraction, and the bubble of gas, which is expelled.

Let us now take a live Triton, and examine its lungs under a magnifying power of 150 diameters; we can only see a very small bit at a time, but that bit will show us the circulation in the capillary network—a wondrous spectacle, indeed.

Fig. 19.



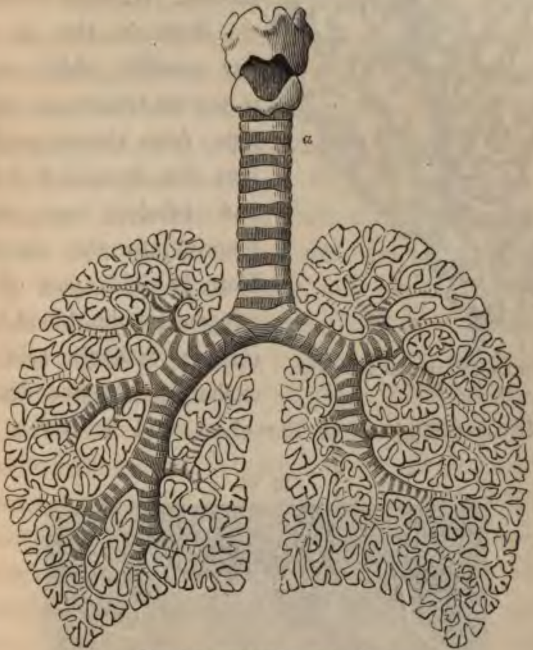
Circulation in Lungs of Triton (after Wagner).

The lung of a man is little more than a repetition on a large scale of this very scheme : a myriad of small air-sacs are crowded together in the cavity of his chest. The Trachea, or windpipe, divides and subdivides into a number of *bronchial tubes,* which, when inflamed, as in violent colds, are the seat of the disease so familiar to all—*bronchitis.* A glance at Fig. 20, on the opposite page, copied from Dr Dalton, will enable the reader to understand the relation of these tubes to the lungs.

The tubes are seen to end in little islets of lung-substance : these are the "pulmonary lobules." If we now apply the microscope, each lobule is seen to be a cluster of air-cells (Fig. 21), of which, it is calculated that the human lungs contain six hundred millions.

This, which is copied from Kölliker, is partly a real and partly a diagrammatic representation. It enables us to understand how the air passes through the bronchial tube into the air-cells, between which, and outside of which, run the capillaries. These vessels are densely crowded; as may be seen in Fig. 22, also from Kölliker, magnified sixty times.

Fig. 20.

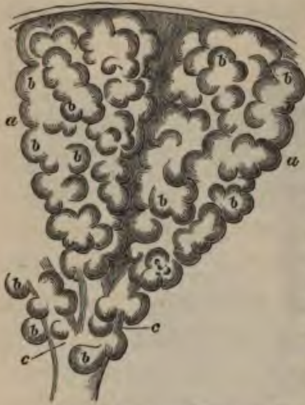


THE BRONCHIAL TUBES OF MAN

a, Windpipe branching off into minute tubes.

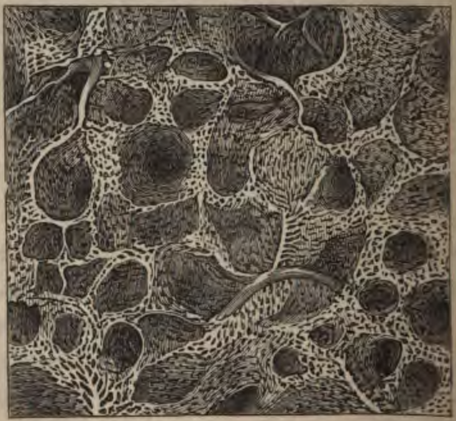
3°. *The Process of Breathing.*—Having thus ascertained the chief points respecting the air breathed and the breathing organ, we must now glance at the process. When we breathe, we draw in the air by our nostrils, which penetrates the trachea or windpipe, from thence passing into the bronchial tubes and tubelets, and from thence into the air-cells. Here it yields part of its oxygen to the blood, receiving carbonic acid in exchange. It was drawn in by a dilatation of the chest, and is driven out

Fig. 21.



A SINGLE BRONCHIAL TUBE WITH AIR-CELLS.

Fig. 22.



CAPILLARIES OF HUMAN LUNGS.

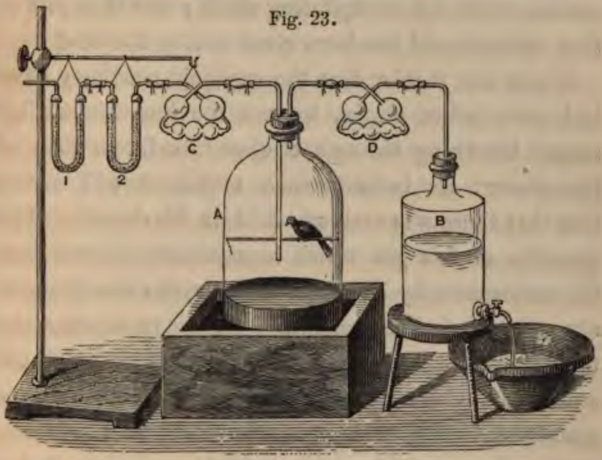
again by a contraction of the chest. Science has accurately measured the amount of air thus inspired and expired—namely, about 20 or 25 cubic inches each time. But we never *empty* our lungs by an expiration; there is always a much larger quantity of air remaining in the air-cells; this quantity varying, of course, with the force of the effort. Herbst found that, while 25 cubic inches was the quantity expelled in ordinary quiet breathing, the quantity would rise to 90, and even 240 cubic inches, by very energetic efforts. It is therefore calculated that an adult man, with a well-developed chest, will retain about 170 cubic inches of air in his lungs, after each expiration, during ordinary breathing; and as 25 inches will be added at the next inspiration, there will be alternately 175 and 200 cubic inches of air acting on the blood which rushes over the vast area of the lungs. The phrase "vast area" is no exaggeration; for small as the bulk of those organs truly is, the amount of *surface* on which blood is exposed to the air in them, has been calculated by Lindenau at not less than 2642 square feet. Is it not wonderful to reflect that, in the course of a single year, 100,000 cubic feet of air have been drawn in and expelled, by something like 9,000,000 of separate and complicated actions of breathing, to aërate more than 3500 tons of blood?

4°. *Tight-lacing.*—The injurious effect of tight-lacing has often been pointed out, and in England, at least, women have pretty generally learned to see the danger, if not always the hideousness, of those wasp-waists once so highly prized. A single fact elicited in the experiments of Herbst will probably have more weight than pages of eloquent exhortation. It is this: the same man who, when naked, was capable of inspiring 190 cubic inches at a breath, could only inspire 130 when dressed: now, if we compare the tightness of women's stays with the tightness of a man's dress, we shall easily form a conception of the serious obstacle to efficient breathing which stays must present; and the injurious effect of this insufficient breathing consists, as we shall see hereafter, in its inducing a *depression of all the vital functions.*

5°. *Alteration of the Air in Respiration.*—In Respiration we draw in and give out a *similar quantity* of air; but this air is by no means of *similar quality.* It has been altered—vitiated. The ancients had no other notion of Respiration than that it served to cool the blood, as the air cools the heated brow. This is not its office. It serves to supply the indispensable conditions of vital changes, by removing carbonic acid from the blood, and supplying its place with oxygen. The air which is expired differs from that which was inspired: it has lost much of its oxygen, and has gained from 3 to 6 per cent of carbonic acid, a large amount of vapour, traces of ammonia, hydrogen, and volatile organic substances. The latter being very putrefiable, gives a fetid taint to the moisture condensed from the air on the window-panes, and to the moisture which soaks into all porous substances in the room. It was pure breathable air when it entered, and is now so vitiated that after a few repetitions of the process it becomes unbreathable. It is made unbreathable by the carbonic acid.

It is not difficult to demonstrate the production of carbonic acid in Respiration. Fig. 23 is an apparatus which beautifully demonstrates it.

Fig. 23.



A bird is placed in the bell-glass A, which is reversed over mercury. A vessel of water, B, serves to establish a current of air as the water flows out, and this current of air entering by the tubes 1 2, which contain pumice-stone moistened with a solution of potass, abandons there its carbonic acid; and the proof that it does so, is seen in the fact that it passes through Liebig's apparatus C (in which there is lime water) *without* producing that milky appearance which would result if any carbonic acid were present, because this carbonic acid would unite with the lime, and form the carbonate of lime, or *chalk*. From C, therefore, the air enters the bell-glass entirely without carbonic acid. It is here breathed by the bird. The air which the bird expires passes from the bell-glass into the apparatus D, and there it meets with lime-water, which it renders milky by precipitating chalk; and thus proves that carbonic acid has been given out by the bird.

If any one thinks that the carbonic acid may have had some other origin, he can convince himself by simply breathing through a glass-tube into a glass of lime-water: its instantaneous milkiness will assure him that there was carbonic acid in his breath. The quantity of this gas which is momently thrown into the atmosphere by each individual, varies according to sex, age, physical and mental condition, and according to the season of the year, and time of day. We are constantly exhaling carbonic acid, but not in constant quantities. Men exhale much more than women; during the ages of from 16 to 40 the quantity exhaled by men nearly doubles that exhaled by women of the same ages. In men it is observed that the amount gradually increases from the age of 8 to that of 30, making a sudden start at the period of puberty. From the age of 30 it decreases gradually, till at extreme old age the amount is no greater than it was at 10. In women, a noticeable phenomenon is observed; the amount increases from infancy to puberty, just as in men; but at that epoch the increase suddenly ceases, and remains stationary till the change of life, when the amount increases. Besides such variations dependent on age and sex, there are others dependent on the muscular activity and physical condition of the individual. The amount of carbonic acid exhaled during digestion is greater than that exhaled during fast, and greater in sunlight than in darkness. Wines, spirits, tea, coffee, and narcotics lessen the amount; not, however, because they interfere with the process of Respiration, but because they cause less carbonic acid to be produced by the organism.

The exchange of these gases, considered simply as an exchange, is a physical fact resting on well-known physical laws. There have been, and there still are, disputes as to whether the gases are *free* in the blood, as in water, or are in a state of slight chemical combination; but the facility with which the exchange is made seems to be as great as if they were free. If blood be shaken in a vessel containing air, it will absorb from that air more than a tenth of its volume of oxygen. It is then *saturated;* and if now poured into a vessel containing carbonic acid, and there shaken, it will abandon almost all its oxygen, and absorb carbonic acid. This is a simple illustration of the interchange effected in the lungs and in the tissues; for, as previously indicated, the delicate walls of the blood-vessels oppose no obstacle to this interchange. It is only necessary that the blood should be brought in contact with an atmosphere, or a fluid, of a composition specifically different from its own. If we substitute hydrogen for oxygen, the animal confined in a vessel containing this gas will be found to exhale carbonic acid with the same facility as when atmospheric

ormers, public attention was aroused. That thou-
ds have been the victims of public ignorance on this
portant matter, may be shown by a single example.
e deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1
d 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital
ounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of
50 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths
ring the same period, after a new system of ventila-
n had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths,
1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad
ntilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more en-
htened on the subject of ventilation, although a dan-
rous indifference, springing from want of elementary
owledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of re-
rmers; but in the country where these lines are writ-
n, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated
en seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh
r. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms,
dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot
cognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere
the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of
ganic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at
st it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even
their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air,
hich makes an Englishman gasp for an open window.
is true that after a while you get accustomed to the
r. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-
lled tavern. On entering, you felt it would be im-
ssible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

air is breathed. No animal can continue long to breathe hydrogen, simply because that gas does not furnish the conditions of vitality; but while the animal breathes in hydrogen, the exhalation of carbonic acid is as perfect as at any other time; thus showing that the exhalation depends on the difference in the nature of the gases in the atmosphere, and in the blood.

6°. *Necessity of Ventilation.*—When we breathe over and over again the same air, we gradually vitiate it by the constant exhalation of carbonic acid, which gradually brings the air up to the point where the difference between it and the blood—as regards the proportion of carbonic acid—disappears. The blood ceases to be arterialised, and the vital functions are arrested. In vain does the air still contain a quantity of life-giving oxygen; the blood cannot take it up, because it cannot get rid of the carbonic acid, and it cannot get rid of its carbonic acid because the conditions of the exchange are absent. To place an animal in air overcharged with carbonic acid, is equivalent to a gradual prevention of his breathing at all. Suffocation results from vitiation of the air in precisely the same manner as from interception of the air. Although burking and gagging are crimes which appal the public, that public seems almost indifferent to the milder form of the same murder when it is called "want of ventilation." In spite of the historical infamy of the Black Hole at Calcutta, our prisons, hospitals, theatres, churches, and other public buildings, were left disgracefully neglected, until, thanks to the energetic labours of our sanitary eformers, public attention was aroused. That thouands have been the victims of public ignorance on this mportant matter, may be shown by a single example. The deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1 and 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital amounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of 7650 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths during the same period, after a new system of ventilation had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths, or 1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad ventilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more enlightened on the subject of ventilation, although a dangerous indifference, springing from want of elementary knowledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of reformers; but in the country where these lines are written, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated men seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh air. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms, so dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot recognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere by the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of organic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at first it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even in their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air, which makes an Englishman gasp for an open window. It is true that after a while you get accustomed to the air. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-filled tavern. On entering, you felt it would be impossible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

air is breathed. No animal can continue long breathe hydrogen, simply because that gas does furnish the conditions of vitality; but while the anim breathes in hydrogen, the exhalation of carbonic ac is as perfect as at any other time; thus showing th the exhalation depends on the difference in the nat of the gases in the atmosphere, and in the blood.

6°. *Necessity of Ventilation.*—When we breathe ov and over again the same air, we gradually vitiate it b the constant exhalation of carbonic acid, which grad ally brings the air up to the point where the differen between it and the blood—as regards the proportion of carbonic acid—disappears. The blood ceases to b arterialised, and the vital functions are arrested. I vain does the air still contain a quantity of life-giv oxygen; the blood cannot take it up, because it cann get rid of the carbonic acid, and it cannot get rid of it carbonic acid because the conditions of the exchang are absent. To place an animal in air overcharg with carbonic acid, is equivalent to a gradual preven tion of his breathing at all. Suffocation results from vitiation of the air in precisely the same manner a from interception of the air. Although burking and gagging are crimes which appal the public, that publi seems almost indifferent to the milder form of the same murder when it is called "want of ventilation." In spite of the historical infamy of the Black Hole of Calcutta, our prisons, hospitals, theatres, churches, and other public buildings, were left disgracefully neglected until, thanks to the energetic labours of our sanitary formers, public attention was aroused. That thousands have been the victims of public ignorance on this important matter, may be shown by a single example. The deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1 and 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital amounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of 7650 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths during the same period, after a new system of ventilation had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths, or 1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad ventilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more enlightened on the subject of ventilation, although a dangerous indifference, springing from want of elementary knowledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of reformers; but in the country where these lines are written, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated men seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh air. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms, so dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot recognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere by the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of organic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at first it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even in their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air, which makes an Englishman gasp for an open window. It is true that after a while you get accustomed to the air. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-filled tavern. On entering, you felt it would be impossible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

air is breathed. No animal can continue lon
breathe hydrogen, simply because that gas does
furnish the conditions of vitality ; but while the an
breathes in hydrogen, the exhalation of carbonic
is as perfect as at any other time ; thus showing
the exhalation depends on the difference in the m
of the gases in the atmosphere, and in the blood.

6°. *Necessity of Ventilation.*—When we breathe
and over again the same air, we gradually vitiate
the constant exhalation of carbonic acid, which g
ally brings the air up to the point where the diffe
between it and the blood—as regards the propor
of carbonic acid—disappears. The blood ceases
arterialised, and the vital functions are arrested
vain does the air still contain a quantity of life-g
oxygen ; the blood cannot take it up, because it c
get rid of the carbonic acid, and it cannot get rid
carbonic acid because the conditions of the exc
are absent. To place an animal in air overch
with carbonic acid, is equivalent to a gradual pr
tion of his breathing at all. Suffocation results
vitiation of the air in precisely the same mann
from interception of the air. Although burkin
gagging are crimes which appal the public, that p
seems almost indifferent to the milder form o
same murder when it is called "want of ventila
In spite of the historical infamy of the Black H
Calcutta, our prisons, hospitals, theatres, churches
other public buildings, were left disgracefully negl
until, thanks to the energetic labours of our sa

formers, public attention was aroused. That thouands have been the victims of public ignorance on this mportant matter, may be shown by a single example. he deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1 nd 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital mounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of 650 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths uring the same period, after a new system of ventilaion had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths, r 1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad entilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more enightened on the subject of ventilation, although a dangerous indifference, springing from want of elementary knowledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of reformers; but in the country where these lines are written, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated men seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh air. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms, so dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot recognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere by the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of organic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at first it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even in their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air, which makes an Englishman gasp for an open window. It is true that after a while you get accustomed to the air. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-filled tavern. On entering, you felt it would be impossible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

air is breathed. No animal can continue lon
breathe hydrogen, simply because that gas does
furnish the conditions of vitality ; but while the
breathes in hydrogen, the exhalation of carbonic
is as perfect as at any other time ; thus showing
the exhalation depends on the difference in the
of the gases in the atmosphere, and in the blood.

6°. *Necessity of Ventilation.*—When we breathe
and over again the same air, we gradually vitiate
the constant exhalation of carbonic acid, which
ally brings the air up to the point where the differ
between it and the blood—as regards the propor
of carbonic acid—disappears. The blood ceases
arterialised, and the vital functions are arrested.
vain does the air still contain a quantity of life-gi
oxygen ; the blood cannot take it up, because it can
get rid of the carbonic acid, and it cannot get rid
carbonic acid because the conditions of the exch
are absent. To place an animal in air overchar
with carbonic acid, is equivalent to a gradual prev
tion of his breathing at all. Suffocation results fr
vitiation of the air in precisely the same manner
from interception of the air. Although burking
gagging are crimes which appal the public, that pub
seems almost indifferent to the milder form of
same murder when it is called " want of ventilatio
In spite of the historical infamy of the Black Hole
Calcutta, our prisons, hospitals, theatres, churches,
other public buildings, were left disgracefully neglecte
until, thanks to the energetic labours of our sanitar

ormers, public attention was aroused. That thou-
nds have been the victims of public ignorance on this
portant matter, may be shown by a single example.
e deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1
d 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital
nounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of
50 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths
ring the same period, after a new system of ventila-
n had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths,
1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad
ntilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more en-
ghtened on the subject of ventilation, although a dan-
rous indifference, springing from want of elementary
owledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of re-
rmers; but in the country where these lines are writ-
n, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated
en seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh
r. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms,
dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot
cognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere
the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of
ganic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at
st it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even
their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air,
hich makes an Englishman gasp for an open window.
is true that after a while you get accustomed to the
r. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-
led tavern. On entering, you felt it would be im-
ssible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

air is breathed. No animal can continue long to breathe hydrogen, simply because that gas does not furnish the conditions of vitality; but while the animal breathes in hydrogen, the exhalation of carbonic acid is as perfect as at any other time; thus showing that the exhalation depends on the difference in the nature of the gases in the atmosphere, and in the blood.

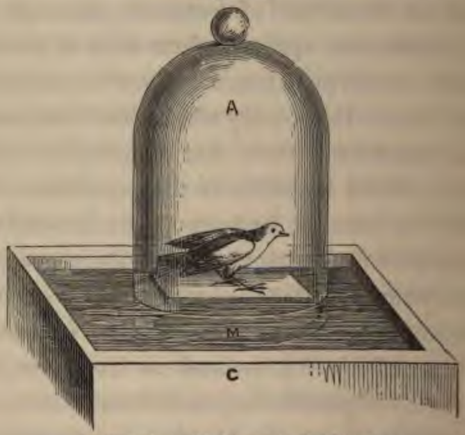
6°. *Necessity of Ventilation.*—When we breathe over and over again the same air, we gradually vitiate it by the constant exhalation of carbonic acid, which gradually brings the air up to the point where the difference between it and the blood—as regards the proportions of carbonic acid—disappears. The blood ceases to be arterialised, and the vital functions are arrested. In vain does the air still contain a quantity of life-giving oxygen; the blood cannot take it up, because it cannot get rid of the carbonic acid, and it cannot get rid of its carbonic acid because the conditions of the exchange are absent. To place an animal in air overcharged with carbonic acid, is equivalent to a gradual prevention of his breathing at all. Suffocation results from vitiation of the air in precisely the same manner as from interception of the air. Although burking and gagging are crimes which appal the public, that public seems almost indifferent to the milder form of the same murder when it is called "want of ventilation." In spite of the historical infamy of the Black Hole at Calcutta, our prisons, hospitals, theatres, churches, and other public buildings, were left disgracefully neglected, until, thanks to the energetic labours of our sanitary reformers, public attention was aroused. That thousands have been the victims of public ignorance on this important matter, may be shown by a single example. The deaths of new-born infants between the ages of 1 and 15 days, which in the Dublin Lying-in Hospital amounted in the course of four years to 2944 out of 7650 births, were suddenly reduced to only 279 deaths during the same period, after a new system of ventilation had been adopted. Thus more than 2500 deaths, or 1 in every 3 births, must be attributed to the bad ventilation.

In England the public is daily becoming more enlightened on the subject of ventilation, although a dangerous indifference, springing from want of elementary knowledge, is still prevalent, and taxes the patience of reformers; but in the country where these lines are written, it is painful to observe that even highly cultivated men seem almost insensible to the importance of fresh air. The Germans sit for hours in low crowded rooms, so dense with tobacco-smoke that on entering you cannot recognise your friends; and so vitiated is the atmosphere by the compound of breath, bad tobacco, exhalations of organic putrefiable matters, and an iron stove, that at first it seems impossible for you to breathe in it. Even in their private rooms they breathe a hot, musty, *dry* air, which makes an Englishman gasp for an open window. It is true that after a while you get accustomed to the air. You also get accustomed to that of the smoke-filled tavern. On entering, you felt it would be impossible to stay in it ten minutes; but in less than

ten minutes it has become quite tolerable, and in half an hour scarcely appreciable. If you quit the room for a few minutes, and return once more after having breathed fresh air, again you perceive the poisonous condition of the atmosphere, but again you will get accustomed to it, and seem to breathe freely in it.

Was this atmosphere really not injurious ? or have your sensations, like sentinels asleep, ceased to warn you of the danger ? To answer this, we will first bring forward some experiments instituted by Claude Bernard on the influence of vitiated air (Fig. 24). A sparrow left in a bell-glass to breathe over and over again the same air, will live in it for upwards of three hours ; but at the close of the second hour—when there is consequently still air of sufficient purity to permit *this* sparrow's breathing it for more than an

Fig. 24.



A, Bell-glass ; M. Mercury ; C, Trough.

hour longer—if a fresh and vigorous sparrow be introduced, it will expire almost immediately. The air which would suffice for the respiration of one sparrow suffocates another. Nay more, if the sparrow be taken from the glass at the close of the third hour, when very feeble, it may be restored to activity; and no sooner has it recovered sufficient vigour to fly about again, than, if once more introduced into the atmosphere from which it was taken, it will perish immediately. Another experiment points to a similar result. A sparrow is confined in a bell-glass, and at the end of about an hour and a half it is still active, although obviously suffering: a second sparrow is introduced; in about ten minutes the new-comer is dead, while the original occupant flies about the lecture-room as soon as liberated.

One cannot try experiments on human beings as on animals, but accident and disease frequently furnish us with experiments made to our hand. What has been just related of the birds, is confirmed by an accident which befell two young Frenchwomen. They were in a room heated by a coke-stove. One of them was suffocated, and fell senseless on the ground. The other, who was in bed, suffering from typhoid fever, resisted the poisonous influence of the atmosphere, so as to be able to scream till assistance came. They were both rescued, but the healthy girl, who had succumbed to the noxious air, was found to have a paralysis of the left arm, which lasted for more than six months. Here, as in the case of the sparrows, we find the paradoxical result to be, that the poisonous action of a vitiated air is better resisted by the feeble, sickly organis by the vigorous, healthy organism.

This paradox admits of a physiological expla In the vitiated air of a German *Kneipe*, as in t the houses of the poor, we find those who hav time to adjust themselves to it, breathing wi apparent inconvenience, although each new-come the air to be vitiated; and because they "get tomed to it," people very naturally suppose th injurious effect can follow. Here lies the dang fallacy. They get accustomed to it, indeed, and because they do so are they contented to remain i but at what price? by what means? By a gr *depression of all the functions* of nutrition and tion. In this depressed condition less oxyge absorbed, and therefore less is needed in the at phere. A vitiated air will suffice for the respir of a depressed organism, as it would amply suffic the respiration of a cold-blooded animal. Whe enter a vitiated atmosphere, our breathing bec laborious; the consequence of this is a depressi all the organic functions, and *then* the breathing is again, because we no longer require so much ox and we no longer produce so much carbonic acid. it not for this adjustment of the organism t medium, by a gradual depression of the functions, tinued existence in a vitiated atmosphere woul impossible; we see the vigorous bird perish in taneously in air which would sustain the enfeebled for upwards of an hour.

Thus does Physiology explain the paradox; but at the same time it points out the fallacy of supposing that bad air can be harmless because we "get accustomed" to it. It is a fortunate circumstance for those who have to breathe bad air, that the organism is quickly depressed to such a point as to render the air breathable, yet no one will deny that depressions of this kind are necessarily injurious, especially when frequently experienced. There is indeed a wonderful elasticity in the organism, enabling it to adapt itself to changing conditions; but a frequent depression of functional activity must be injurious, and fatal if prolonged.

It is interesting to observe the effect of a *gradual* adjustment of the organism, as contrasted with one less gradual. The longer the time allowed, the easier is this adjustment. Thus a bird will live three hours in a certain quantity of air; in the same quantity, two birds of the same species, age, and size, will *not* live one hour and a half, as might be supposed, but only one hour and a quarter. Conversely, the bird which will live only one hour in a pint of air, will live three hours in two pints.

7°. *Respiration a vital Problem.*—Enlightened by these remarkable results, we shall now be able to regard Respiration as a physiological function rather than as a simple physical process. On more than one occasion we have had to protest against the tendency to explain vital phenomena by physical and chemical laws only, without regard to the order of conceptions specially belonging to vital phenomena; and we must repe that protest in the present case. That Respiration is ultimately dependent on physical laws, no one thinks of disputing; and in the arduous endeavour to detec the operation of those laws, it is natural that men should neglect the still more difficult study of vital laws. But we think it can be shown that however far analysis may trace the operation of the laws of gaseous interchange and diffusion, and the condensing action of moist membranes, these will only conduct us to the threshold; they will never open for us the temple. These physical laws reveal only one part of the mystery. Respiration is not a simple physical fact. It is the function of a living organism, and as such receives a specific character from that organism. No sooner do we cease to regard the exclusively physical aspect of this function—no sooner do we fix our attention on the organism and *its* influence, than the theory raised on the simple laws of gaseous interchange suddenly totters and falls.

It seems easy to explain why warm-blooded animals cease to breathe in an atmosphere charged with a certain per-centage of carbonic acid, although there may still remain sufficient oxygen to permit a candle to burn in it, and even to permit continued respiration if the carbonic acid be removed. The presence of a certain amount of carbonic acid in the air *prevents* the exhalation of carbonic acid from the blood. As we read the explanation, nothing can seem clearer, and we admire the skill with which the laws of the absorption of gases are brought to bear on the question. But as we pursue our researches, various difficulties arise; and as we extend the inquiry from the respiration of warm-blooded to that of cold-blooded animals, we learn that the fact is not at all true of the simpler organisms. Let us for a moment consider one striking contradiction: the air which has once passed through the lungs of a man, and which, in losing four or five per cent of its oxygen, has become charged with three or four per cent of carbonic acid, will yield but very little of its remaining oxygen when again passed through the lungs; and if this air be breathed over and over again, until the sense of suffocation forces a cessation, the air will still be found to contain ten per cent of oxygen—that is to say, nearly half its original quantity. In air thus vitiated the respiratory process is impossible, but *only impossible for warm-blooded animals in health:* frogs, reptiles, fish, and molluscs, instead of perishing when the air has lost about half its oxygen, continue to breathe, and to absorb oxygen, almost as long as there is any left. Spallanzani, Humboldt, and Matteucci, have placed this beyond a doubt by their experiments; and when we consider how long these experiments have been before the world, it is a matter of surprise that the contradiction they give to all the purely physical theories of Respiration has not been insisted on. If the process depends *simply* on the proportion of gases in the atmosphere, how is it that one animal can continue to breathe in an atmosphere unbreathable by another? If it be *simply* the interchange of oxygen and carbonic acid, and this interchange be frustrated whenever el per cent of oxygen has disappeared, the law mu *absolute:* it must be as applicable to reptiles molluscs as to birds or mammals. Instead of thi find that reptiles can continue to breathe long such a limit has been passed; they continue to ab oxygen as long as even only three per cent remai spite of the continually increasing proportion of bonic acid. How is it that the physical law absorption frustrated the Respiration of one cla animals, and were powerless with another class? is it that, when a bird and a frog are confined i same vessel, the frog will continue to absorb ox from the vitiated air in which the bird has perished? Clearly the cause of this difference li the difference of the organisms; and we must no lo seek in the mere quantities of gases an explanati interrupted respiration; we must no longer say "breathing becomes impossible when the air is cha with a certain amount of carbonic acid, *because* amount prevents the gaseous interchange;" bu must say that such an amount prevents the gas interchange, because it interferes with the org action of the pulmonary apparatus. The distinc becomes palpable when we have an organism whic not affected by this amount of carbonic acid, an even more palpable when we see a warm-blo animal capable of breathing for a long period th which, under a different condition, it would find breathable. We have seen how a bird, with functions depressed, can continue to breathe for an hour in an atmosphere which immediately suffocated another bird of the same species; whereby it became clear that the lungs of one warm-blooded animal could absorb oxygen from an atmosphere in which there was such a proportion of carbonic acid, that sufficient oxygen could not be absorbed by a vigorous animal of the same species.

The intervention of organic conditions, modifying the simple physical laws of gaseous exchange, is sufficiently evident from what has just been said; but we have as yet no clear insight into the nature of this intervention; we do not know why blood, charged with carbonic acid, cannot in the one case exchange that gas for the oxygen, of which ten per cent still remains, since in another case the same blood *can* effect the exchange when there is even less than ten per cent of oxygen.

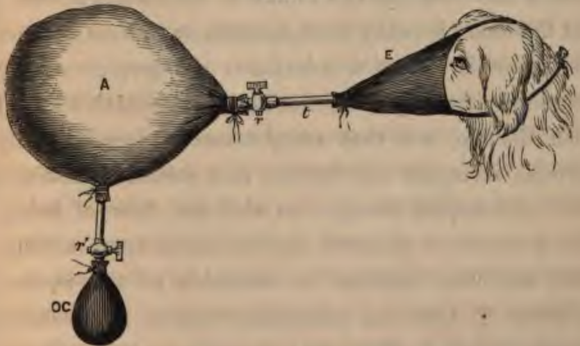
Atmospheric air contains only twenty-one per cent of oxygen. But if fifty per cent of oxygen be mixed with fifty of carbonic acid, a warm-blooded animal is suffocated in it, in spite of there being more than double the amount of oxygen present in the ordinary atmosphere. Bernard, who made the experiment, thinks that the carbonic acid in this mixture prevented the oxygen from entering the blood, not only because of its greater solubility, which gives it a tendency to displace the oxygen, but also because of the obstacle it presents to the exhalation of carbonic acid. On the other hand, the extensive and careful experiments of Regnault and lation *in the atmosphere* as will prevent its exhalation; its mere presence in the blood seems to be quite harmless, even in large quantities, provided always that it be not retained there to the exclusion of oxygen. Carbonic acid, when absorbed into the blood, which is alkaline, cannot there exert its irritant action as an acid, because it will either be transformed into a carbonate or be dissolved. Bernard has injected large quantities into the veins and arteries, and under the skin of rabbits, and found no noxious effect ensue. The more carbonic acid there is in the blood, the more will be exhaled, provided always that the *air* be not already so charged with it as to prevent this exhalation.

This is a sufficient answer to the Teetotal argument, that Alcohol *must* be poisonous, because it is said to cause an accumulation of carbonic acid in the blood. This is not true, as a matter of fact; and if true, it would in no way affect the breathing process; the extra quantity of carbonic acid would be got rid of as easily as the usual quantity.

But *oxide of carbon* is a poisonous gas. Every reader will remember the *blue* flame which rises from lighted coals or wood; that is oxide of carbon; and being notoriously poisonous, it has by some writers been selected as the real agent in those numerous deaths occurring from voluntary and involuntary exposure to the fumes of charcoal in closed chambers. Carbonic acid was said to be innocent, and oxide of carbon had to bear the whole infamy. There is no doubt, however, that although carbonic acid is not a poison, it will produce asphyxia, and deaths from charcoal-fumes may occur either from this asphyxia, or from poisoning by oxide of carbon, or from a conjunction of the two. Oxide of carbon is truly called a poison, because its action is deleterious even in slight doses, no matter what may be the state of the atmosphere ; but carbonic acid is only deleterious when the quantity in the atmosphere is such that the absorption of oxygen is frustrated.

Carbonic acid passes to and fro, leaving the blood otherwise unaltered; but oxide of carbon really kills the blood. If we take a little venous blood and expose it to oxide of carbon, it becomes instantly scarlet. In appearance the change has been nothing more than would have occurred had oxygen, instead of the oxide, been employed. But in fact, the change has been very considerable.

Fig. 25.



In Fig. 25 we see how Bernard causes a dog to breathe the oxide of carbon. At first the gas, which is in the bladder, is kept from the dog, and the blood fl from an opened vein is seen to be black. But on t the cock, and causing the oxide to mingle with breathed, the blood is rapidly seen to be scarlet unless the operation is suspended immediatel dog will die suffocated. This scarlet blood wi become black again on exposure to carbonic ac would be the case if oxygen had given the scarle our. On the contrary, the scarlet colour is re for weeks.

Prussic acid produces a similar effect. Poisoni prussic acid, or by oxide of carbon, may be detec this scarlet colour of the venous blood.

The effect of oxide of carbon is to render the discs incapable of that process of exhalation, on as we have seen, the activity of the organism de The blood, to all appearance, preserves its vitali neither the form nor the colour of its discs is al but the blood is really dead, because its restless cl are arrested. Ever wonderful is the fact cons obtruding itself upon us, that Life is inseparably with Change, and that every arrest is Death. through incessant destruction and reconstructi vital phenomena emerge, an ebb and flow of The moment we preserve organic matter from de tion, we have rendered it incapable of the r strivings of Life. A spirit like that of Faust ranging through all matter; and if ever it shoul to the passing moment, "Stay! thou art fair career will be at an end.

Deaths from Suffocation.—We have seen that a current of fresh air prevents carbonic acid from being noxious, unless the quantity be very considerable; and it is on this account that coal, coke, candles, gas, &c. can be burned in our apartments without injury. But it is important to know that a current of fresh air will not always prevent death from suffocation. It is important to know that there is no absolute safety in the fact of the room being ventilated; the mere presence of carbonic acid will not cause suffocation in such a room, but unhappily the carbonic acid is frequently accompanied by oxide of carbon, and it is to *this* we must attribute those accidents which have occurred in manufactories, when the workmen, seated at tables under which coke was burning, have fallen back suffocated. Dr Marye cites a case of asphyxia which occurred in a room, one of the window-panes of which was broken, so that a current of air must have circulated in it. In 1835, a shopkeeper of Paris was found suffocated in his bed, although the room in which he slept was over the shop, communicating with it by an open staircase, and the shop had its windows, opening on the street, imperfectly closed. In spite of this free access of air, the noxious vapours from a stove in which coke and coal were burning, suffocated him.

Gas is a great spoiler of the air; but it has the merit of giving timely warning of the danger, by the horrible smell which accompanies its escape. This smell is perceptible when there is only one part in a thousand parts of air; becomes very offensive when the proportion is

$\frac{1}{750}$ or $\frac{1}{500}$, and is almost insupportable as the
tion increases. If the gas has escaped from a c
the pipes, and been allowed to mingle with th
which a free circulation by ventilation is imposs
that the proportion of gas amounts to $\frac{1}{11}$, it expl
the introduction of a candle. This was the c
that terrible accident some twenty years ago in
Street, when a whole house was blown up,
powder-mill had been ignited. Gas, when bur
also very injurious, and seems to have a particula
effect upon the nervous system, as all persons kn
have attended to their sensations. It produces
ment, headache, lassitude, and often sickness.
ventilation is in all cases indispensable, it become
and more urgent in proportion to the amount of
coke which is burning in the room; and when we
on the compound of evils which meet togethe
theatre, concert-room, or lecture-room—the air
of its oxygen by the burning and the breathin
loaded with carbonic acid, animal effluvia, an
there can be little surprise if a violent headac
unusual languor, is the result of staying three h
such an atmosphere.

Death from drowning is also a form of suffo
On sinking into the water, a man first struggles
surface, and gasps for breath; but with the air
enters some water, and this makes him cough; in
ing to expel the water, he expels a great part of
which he had drawn in. In a few seconds his st
fails; he can no longer rise to the surface, the

demand for fresh air forces him to open his mouth, and this only allows more water to enter, and asphyxia results. But this is not always the course of the phenomena. Sometimes the man receives such a shock that he is instantaneously deprived of the use of his faculties —he faints in the water, and dies without a struggle. Sir Benjamin Brodie tells a story of a man who was recovered from drowning, and who described it as being a very calm and blissful mode of death. The last thing he was conscious of was, that he quietly counted the pebbles on the bottom.

III. THEORIES OF RESPIRATION.—It is hoped that the foregoing pages have furnished the reader with many important hints for practical guidance, and have duly impressed him with the serious necessity of attending to ventilation in bedrooms, sitting-rooms, and manufactories; but there are also speculative points which might profitably detain us, after we have fully satisfied ourselves on the practical points. A few of these may now be touched on.

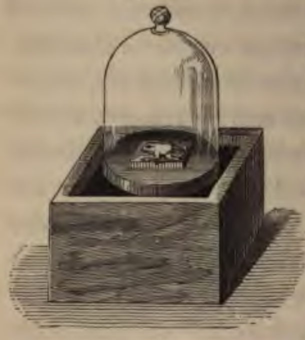
And, first, of that popular theory which declares Respiration to be a process of Oxidation. It probably caused the reader a pleasant feeling of surprise when he first heard that the burning of a candle, the rusting of iron, and the process of breathing, were only three forms of the same process—three names for three different forms of combustion or oxidation. There is, indeed, a fascination in such generalisations. One almost regrets to find them not correct. I am sorry to say this one is not correct. The burning of a candle and the rusting of iron are, indeed, two forms of one process of combustion. They are oxidations; but respiration can no longer be considered, in any sense, as a process of oxidation. The combustion-theory is a mistake from first to last. Respiration, as a process, is two-fold—the exhalation of carbonic acid, and the absorption of oxygen.

The interesting experiments of Priestley will enable us to set forth the differences between Respiration and Combustion. He placed mice in a bell-glass, where in due time they were suffocated by the air which they had vitiated; other mice were introduced, and they expired immediately. In another bell-glass a candle went out after having in its combustion absorbed a part of the oxygen; another burning candle was introduced, and it was at once extinguished by this vitiated air. In both of these vessels some mint was now placed, where it flourished, and so completely revivified the air, by absorbing its carbonic acid and giving out oxygen, that mice could again breathe in the one, and a candle burn in the other. In these experiments we *seem* to have a demonstration of the identity of Combustion and Respiration—and this, indeed, was the conclusion drawn; but that the conclusion is erroneous, appears from the experiments of Claude Bernard, who takes a bell-glass containing an atmosphere of 15 per cent of oxygen, and 2 per cent of carbonic acid—the rest of the oxygen having disappeared to form water with the hydrogen of the candle which has just gone out. In this atmosphere, in which a candle will not burn, a linnet will breathe ase for some time. Bernard then reverses the experiment, and makes an atmosphere in which a candle will burn, but in which an animal instantaneously perishes—an atmosphere composed half of oxygen and half of carbonic acid, in which a candle will burn *better* than in the air, because of the greater amount of oxygen; but in which the animal perishes, because, in spite of the amount of oxygen, that oxygen cannot be absorbed. The bird, when about to expire in vitiated air, will be recalled to life if the carbonic acid be removed by the introduction of potash—showing that it is owing to the presence of this carbonic acid that Respiration is impeded; but we cannot thus restore the expiring flame of the candle by removing the carbonic acid. Place lighted candles in two bell-glasses, and as soon as the combustion grows feeble, introduce into one glass some potash to remove the carbonic acid, you will, nevertheless, find that the candles in both glasses will go out at the same instant. The experiment is very simple, and its significance is plain. By it we see the difference between Combustion, which is only oxidation, and Respiration, which is not *oxidation* but *exchange*. In the combustion of the candle the oxidation is everything, and no process of exchange takes place. In the breathing of an animal the exchange is everything, and no oxidation takes place. The candle expires because there is not enough oxygen in the air; the animal expires because there is too much carbonic acid in the air.

Further, to prove that Respiration is an exchange of gases in the lungs, and not a process of oxidation, we need only refer to the experiments of Spallanzani W. Edwards—experiments so celebrated, that one amazed to find one's-self citing them in this discussi which they ought long ago to have closed.

A frog was placed in a bell-glass containing p hydrogen gas, reversed ov mercury: Fig. 26. Bef placing it there, all the had been pressed out of lungs. For eight hours an a half it continued breathe this hydrogen, a continued to give out ca bonic acid. The same expe riment will succeed al with warm-blooded animals if tried on those newly born; but after they hav breathed for some hours they are unable to stand the test. These experiments prove that carbonic acid pre-exists in the blood, and is not formed during respiration by the oxygen as it enters; and prove likewise, that the respiratory process is a double one of *exhalation and absorption*, which can take place as well with hydrogen as with oxygen: and we are thus forced to exclude the idea of oxidation altogether. Although respiration can take place without oxygen, life will not long continue without it; for, as before stated, oxygen is the power which burns organic matter into life.

Fig. 26.



There is another form of the combustion-the y those who give up the idea of carbonic acid being ormed in the lungs. It is this: "The oxygen of the ir burns the carbon of the tissues into carbonic acid, nd the hydrogen into water." Widely as this hypothesis has been accepted, there is not one bit of direct evidence that carbonic acid and water are ever formed in this way in the organism; it is purely inferential, and there are many reasons against our accepting it even hypothetically. But even on the supposition that such direct oxidations were the source of the carbonic acid and water, we should still have to declare that Respiration was not a process of Combustion. If oxidation of tissue is one *result* of Respiration, it is not the *process*.

Why is death inevitable when the access of fresh oxygen is excluded? The fact we know—of the reason we are ignorant. There still remains a large quantity of oxygen in the blood of the expiring animal; nor will death be sensibly retarded if fresh oxygen is injected into the veins and arteries. How is this? The process of respiration brings oxygen to the blood; yet, if the oxygen be brought there through a more direct channel while respiration is impeded, the animal will die as quickly as if left to itself. Bernard tied a dog's head in a bag, which would in a certain time produce suffocation, and he found that period by no means retarded when he injected oxygen into the arteries.

2°. *The Balance of Nature.*—Quitting for a moment this labyrinth of difficulty and doubt, which alternately fascinates and disheartens us when we strive to gain

But Nature is apt to elude the grasp of swift ns, and she repeatedly declines to fall into the ymmetrical of their formulas. Not that Nature icious or illogical; but logicians are apt to draw nces before they have collected sufficient data. e, in the present case, point-blank declares that fluence of vegetation on the atmosphere is totally *reciable*, unless the atmosphere be in a closed ber or vessel, and *then* the influence is striking. an wit has discovered no test delicate enough to eciate the influence of plants on the free atmosphere hich we live. The depth and compass of this air- are too vast, and the amount of oxygen absorbed nimals too trivial in comparison, for any effect to ppreciable; moreover, the mixture of the gases in ir, and their mutual diffusion, is so rapid, that no ence has yet been detected in the proportions of en and carbonic acid in the air of crowded towns ooded valleys. The air of cities will hold more ous exhalations suspended in it, but its gaseous osition will be the same as that of the country. ive an idea of the insignificant part played by ani- as vitiators of the great air-ocean, we may men- the calculation made by the distinguished chemist as, that all the oxygen consumed by all the animals he surface of the globe during one hundred years ld not amount to more than the $\frac{1}{8000}$ of the quan- in our atmosphere; and even supposing all vegeta- to be annihilated, consequently no oxygen to be rned to the air by the incessant reduction of the some explanation of the myriad processes of Life, let us stand apart and contemplate the marvel of respiratory interchange, no longer as an animal function, but rather as a planetary phenomenon; let us endeavour to picture to ourselves the silent creative activity everywhere dependent on this interchange. The forests, the prairies, the meadows, the cornfields, and gardens—the mighty expanse of plant-life covering mountain and valley—these subsist on the carbonic acid which is exhaled from the lungs and bodies of animals. Plants take up this carbonic acid from the atmosphere, mould the carbon into their own substance, and set free the oxygen, once more returning it to the atmosphere. Animals reverse the process, taking up the oxygen, and giving out carbonic acid for the nourishment of plants. This beautiful rhythmus of organic life has been so often described that it has almost become a commonplace, without, however, losing its charm for the contemplative mind.

The dependence of plant on animal, and of animal on plant, united in one mystery, and ever acting each for the advantage of the other, is not an idea to lose its charm by becoming familiar; but it sometimes leads to misconceptions. What, for instance, seems more natural than that the influence of trees planted in our cities should be very beneficial? If trees can thus withdraw the noxious carbonic acid from the vitiated air of cities, would it not be desirable—nay, ought it not peremptorily to be demanded—that as many trees should be planted in our streets as we can find room for? Such conclusions are soon reached by swift logicians. But Nature is apt to elude the grasp of swift logicians, and she repeatedly declines to fall into the most symmetrical of their formulas. Not that Nature is capricious or illogical; but logicians are apt to draw inferences before they have collected sufficient data. Nature, in the present case, point-blank declares that the influence of vegetation on the atmosphere is totally *inappreciable*, unless the atmosphere be in a closed chamber or vessel, and *then* the influence is striking. Human wit has discovered no test delicate enough to appreciate the influence of plants on the free atmosphere in which we live. The depth and compass of this air-ocean are too vast, and the amount of oxygen absorbed by animals too trivial in comparison, for any effect to be appreciable; moreover, the mixture of the gases in the air, and their mutual diffusion, is so rapid, that no difference has yet been detected in the proportions of oxygen and carbonic acid in the air of crowded towns or wooded valleys. The air of cities will hold more noxious exhalations suspended in it, but its gaseous composition will be the same as that of the country. To give an idea of the insignificant part played by animals as vitiators of the great air-ocean, we may mention the calculation made by the distinguished chemist Dumas, that all the oxygen consumed by all the animals on the surface of the globe during one hundred years would not amount to more than the $\frac{1}{8000}$ of the quantity in our atmosphere; and even supposing all vegetation to be annihilated, consequently no oxygen to be returned to the air by the incessant reduction of the carbonic acid, there would still need a period of te thousand years before the diminution of the oxyge could become appreciable by any instruments we hav hitherto invented.

3°. *Varieties in Animals.*—The fact that Respi tion is an animal function, dependent upon a peculi organic apparatus, leads us at once to suspect that will exhibit great varieties—not only in various anima but in the same animal under different conditions.

We learn, for example, without surprise, that anima of large bulk consume more air than the smalle animals; horses and oxen more than men; men mo than dogs and cats. But, to use an Eastern figure, raises the eyebrow of astonishment when we learn th the proportion of carbonic acid exhaled by a man a a horse bears no sort of correspondence to the diffe ences in their relative bulk—the proportion being 1 to 16. We are, in like manner, puzzled to find that full-grown cat only exhales 1⅜ of carbonic acid, whe a rabbit produces more than 2. How is this to explained? Is there not a streak of light tremblin on this question when we bring forward the fact pr viously mentioned, that the vegetable feeders uniform exhale more carbonic acid than the animal feeders, a that carnivorous animals exhale more than their usu quantity if they are fed on vegetables? Some lig may fall from this source, but it does not suffice clear up the obscurity.

Another interesting problem also arises here— Although the larger the animal, the greater the *ab* amount of carbonic acid it produces,* yet the smaller the animal the greater is the *relative* amount it produces. Thus, supposing the production of carbonic acid be estimated according to each pound-weight of the animal, we shall find that the smaller the animal the greater will be its proportion. But it is not size and weight alone which determine the differences in the amount of air consumed; far greater differences will arise from the varieties of organisation. We may accept it as an axiom in physiology, that the activity of Respiration is inseparably connected with vital activity—not simply muscular activity, as some writers maintain, but all processes whatever, involving chemical change within the body. The most striking confirmation of this axiom is perhaps to be seen in the phenomena of hybernation or winter-sleep. No sooner are the vital functions reduced to this extremely feeble condition, in which we may almost say life is suspended, than these hybernating animals are so incapable of ordinary respiration that they may be placed in an atmosphere of pure carbonic acid, and remain there unhurt for four hours; whereas if they were placed in such an atmosphere when their breathing was going on, they would instantly perish.

One would imagine, on hearing this, that our ordinie, and the lassitude which succeeds mental or ional excitement, will be accompanied by a corre- ling depression of the respiratory function. Nay, the concentration of the mind on any subject will ice this. Every one knows the state of "breath- ttention." Whenever the mind is preoccupied by verful impression of some duration, the breathing nes so feeble that from time to time we are forced npensate this diminished activity by a deep inspir- This is the rationale of *sighing*, an action com- y attributed only to grief, but which is the accom- nent of all mental preoccupation. The philoso- brooding over his problem, will be heard sighing time to time, almost as deeply as the maiden ling over her forlorn condition. All men sigh their work, when their work deeply engages them; hey do not remark it because the work, and not feelings, engages their attention, whereas during it is their feelings which occupy them.

---

* This applies, of course, only to animals of the same kind. "Vous serez étonné," says Spallanzani, "quand je vous dirai qu'une larve du poids de quelques grains s'approprie presqu' autant d'oxygène dans le même tems, qu'un amphibie mille fois plus volumineux qu'elle."—*Mémoires sur la Resp.*, p. 69. This is because the insect lives so much more rapidly than the reptile.

is an interesting fact, and one which throws light ie intimate connection between respiration and activity, that a very considerable increase in the iction of carbonic acid swiftly follows after eating, quently an enormous reduction in the amount is l to accompany starvation. The fact was estab- l by Spallanzani, and has been repeatedly con- d. Boussingault found that pigeons, when fasting, ot produce half the amount which they produced well fed. Spallanzani suggests that the food g digestion gives off carbonic acid, and this pass-

ing into the blood, is exhaled in respiration—a s
gestion which receives additional force from the
that vegetable food uniformly produces more carb
acid in respiration than animal food. But this
scarcely account for the whole of the increase, and
are led to seek for the other cause in the greater
tivity of the nutritive processes: the fasting ani
has a depressed vitality.

Temperature has considerable influence on resp
ation. The fact has been ascertained by experim
but it might have been deductively established; for
influence of temperature on the vital activities is
known, and whatever influences them must affect
piration. It is only by the aid of such an axiom th
we can find our way amid the apparent contradictions
this subject. The remarkable difference noticed betw
the capabilities of warm and cold blooded animals
breathing vitiated air, is not less than the difference
the effect of temperature on these two classes. We
member our astonishment on learning from Spallanz
that increase in the temperature brings with it an
form increase in the amount of oxygen absorbed
molluscs and reptiles; it was a statement in direct
tradiction to the well-established fact in human ph
ology, that more oxygen was absorbed in cold than
hot weather. Our difficulty was lightened, howe
when we learned that Spallanzani's statement is
true of cold-blooded animals, and true of them
within certain limits: too great a heat ceases to
crease the amount, and gradually diminishes it, as

warm-blooded animals. What are these limits, and why this cessation of increase? The limits are these: take a frog and place it in an atmosphere a little above the freezing-point; as the temperature rises from 36° to 45° Fahrenheit, the amount of oxygen absorbed uniformly increases; it remains nearly stationary from 45° to 57°; at 58° it begins to decrease, and this decrease continues till 104° is reached, and then the frog perishes. The reason is very simple: a certain amount of heat stimulates all the vital functions of the frog, and consequently increases its need for oxygen; when the heat becomes too great it ceases to be a stimulant, and depresses the functional activity, till at length a point is reached when the organism can no longer exist.

On warm-blooded animals the effect of temperature is apparently different, but really the same. Every increase of heat is found to *diminish* their respiration, every increase of cold to *augment* it. Thus it is ascertained that the smaller mammals, at a temperature of 86° to 104° Fahr., consume only half the quantity they consumed at freezing-point. Various experiments on man have elicited the general fact, that under the influence of a moderately cold atmosphere the respiration is increased by one-sixth more than in a moderately warm atmosphere. Precisely as too intense a degree of heat diminishes the respiration of the frog, by enfeebling its vital activity, does too intense a degree of cold diminish the respiration of a warm-blooded animal by enfeebling its vital activity. There are certain limits of temperature within which every increase of heat raises the respiration of the frog, because the increase raises its activity; and there are certain limits within w every decrease of heat raises the respiration of the m because the decrease raises his vital activity; but these limits be overstepped, the stimulant is chan into a debilitant.

We see this very curiously illustrated by the hyb nating animals, such as the dormouse, marmot, hedgehog. They occupy, in this respect, an inter diate position between the cold-blooded and war blooded animals; for although they are really war blooded animals, the effect of temperature on them closely allied to that produced on the cold-blood With every fall of external temperature their resp ation diminishes. Unlike the rest of warm-blood animals, their organism seems to have little power resisting the changes of external temperature; th cannot produce heat with sufficient rapidity to counte balance the loss they sustain from the surface of th bodies when the air is cold. Instead of acting on th as a stimulus, which would accelerate the respirator process, cold acts on them with a depressing influen which gradually reduces their respiration almost to ze But no sooner have they passed into this winter-slee and their organic activity has become very feeble, tha we can at pleasure reawaken it to any degree by raising the surrounding temperature; and as the vital activity once more begins to manifest itself, the respiration (which is only one form of vital activity) likewise becomes manifest.

Why do we breathe? The foregoing pages have ven some answer to the question, *How* do we breathe? t have not hinted at the *why*; yet after reading about e respiratory process, a natural curiosity prompts the quiry as to its cause. Unhappily nothing but ex- emely vague answers can be given. We know that e chest expands and contracts with beautiful rhythm, nd, mostly, as an involuntary, automatic process. We now that our attention is not required, that no effort needed, and indeed that no effort of ours can prevent he regular alternation of inspiration and expiration. Ve can by an effort accelerate or retard these motions, ut we cannot prevent them. The process, then, clearly lepends on a stimulus given to the involuntary part of he nervous system: it is called into action by nervous stimulus, and physiologists have vainly endeavoured to discover the nervous apparatus which is involved, and the rationale of its action. The pressure of carbonic acid in the air-cells, or of venous blood in the capillaries, may act as a stimulus to the pneumogastric nerve; but what is the rationale of making a new-born child draw breath, by whipping its back and continuation? Generally, the stimulus of the cold air on the child's face suffices to make it draw breath, which it expires again in a well-known cry, to mothers' ears most musical; but this stimulus is often insufficient, and the doctor or nurse initiates the little stranger into that experience of "external local applications" which, in later years, will also be freely used as a stimulus to virtue or learning. The fact we know; but why such of morning, bring with them perpetual ri fallings of the temperature of that room; these risings and fallings there are correspondi tuations in the temperature of the glass and the tank, the brass and woodwork of the ca is according to the law by which an equilibrium perature is always established among inorgani The warmer atmosphere rapidly warms the g water—the cooler atmosphere rapidly cools th is true that the water will always be somewha than the atmosphere, because it loses heat in tion, but nevertheless, as the external temperatu and falls, that of the water also rises and falls.

While these changes, so familiar and so easy planation, have been taking place, the bird has neither colder nor warmer; throughout the fluctu of external temperature it has preserved almost formly the very high degree of warmth which, as a belongs to it. Neither the beams of an August nor the nipping east wind of December, have raise lowered its normal heat at any time more than on two degrees. You may perhaps imagine that it been kept warm through the winter by its envelop feathers, but this is true only to a very slight extent; it of its feathers, and you will still find its heat gre above that of the air; whereas, if a heated substa be enveloped in feathers, and left exposed to the air will soon become as cold as the air. Driven from explanation, you will ask, How is it that the bir enabled to preserve a steady temperature of a li

degree a
answer
its proc
tain P
phrases
the bir
law of
cause
which
Thi
factor
invo
we
th
m
e

ımid unsteady influences from without? The is obviously to be sought in the organism and esses, not in any external influence; and a cer- hilosophy, somewhat rash and ready, fond of s and impatient of proof, will assure you that d, as an organised body, is absolved from the equilibrium which rules all inorganic bodies, be- the bird is endowed with a "vital principle suspends the action of physical laws."

s explanation, which to many has seemed satis- , labours under two disadvantages—first, that it s the operation of a "vital principle," of which a form no definite conception; and secondly, that sumed suspension of physical laws is a pure fig- The organism, living or dead, radiates heat with facility; but when living, it produces heat to nsate the loss; and when dead, it no longer produces heat, so that it speedily becomes as cold as the al air. The processes of Life do not "suspend" eration of physical laws, although, by the intro- n of more complex conditions, they bring about s which, superficially considered, look like a sus- n of those laws. A close analysis always detects ysical laws. No one thinks of attributing to a lamp, when lighted under a vessel of water, the of suspending the equilibrium of temperature, se it keeps the water boiling, in spite of the con- loss of heat by evaporation. Without the lamp, iling water would speedily cool below the tem- re of the air; *with* the lamp, it may be kept

indefinitely at the boiling-point, if fresh water be
time to time added to replace what has evapo
There is no "lamp-principle" suspending physical
Nor is there any such mysterious agent in An
Heat. Just as the temperature of the water is k
constant by the continual reproduction of heat sup
ling the amount lost, so is the temperature of the b
kept constant by a continual reproduction of h
within; and although the vital processes by which
reproduction is effected are very far from exhib
the simplicity of the spirit-lamp, and are indeed
involved in great obscurity, yet we know that phy
laws are in no sense suspended thereby, and that
living animal has the tendency to establish an equ
librium between its temperature and that of the obj
surrounding it.

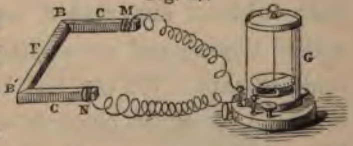
We have only to extend our investigations and e
amine the temperature of the other organised bodie
seaweeds, zoophytes, molluscs, and fish—during the
changes which seem not to have affected the bird,
find that this mysterious "vital principle" sudde
fails altogether. It here abdicates its autocratic pow
It suspends no laws; on the contrary, it permits equi
librium to be established unopposed. The seaweeds a
within a very slight fraction, as cold as the wat
and get warmer as the water warms. The zoophyt
have no appreciable superiority of temperature. T
fish are only two or three degrees warmer. Either w
must give up the explanation which the vital princip
seemed to afford, or we must deny that the cold-blood

mals, as they are called, have any vital principle at

In vain will a refuge be sought in the greater ›ling agency of water over that of air; for although nething must be allowed for this, we cannot by it :ount for the enormous disproportion between the nperature of the fish and the bird; and for these ısons: The Bonito, equally subject to this cooling ency of water, preserves a constant temperature of ° above the sea; and the temperature of the Narıal is nearly that of man—namely, 96° Fahrenheit. oreover, while some marine animals are thus inde-ndent of the temperature of water, serpents, lizards, ıd frogs are dependent on the temperature of the air.

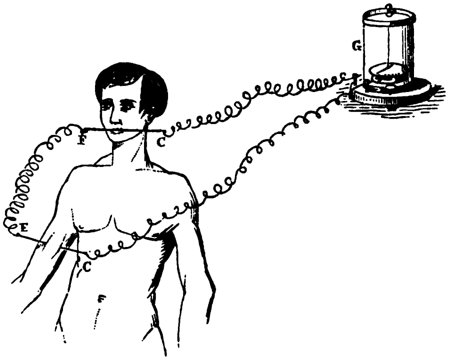
Before entering further into this subject, it will be ell to glance at the instruments by which physiologists ıeasure the delicate differences in amount of heat hich different animals and plants produce. Of the arious thermometers we need say nothing. But there re thermo-electrical ıstruments which need xplanation. Fig. 27 epresents a thermo-lectric couple. Its onstruction rests on the fact that two metals sol-lered together develop electric currents when their olders are maintained at different temperatures. Two ›ars of copper (C, C) are soldered to a bar of iron (F), ınd their two extremities (M, N) are in contact with he wires of the galvanometer (G); so long as the sol-lers (B, B′) remain at the same temperature no electric

Fig. 27.



ngue, to prove that the temperature of the mouth not vary. The direction of the needle indicates in

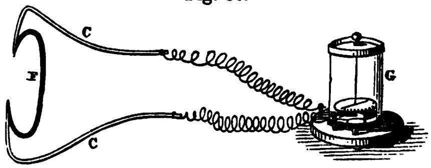
Fig. 29.



ch part there is an excess of heat ; and this is after- ds calculated.

nother application of the same principle is that of rochet's *needles with latero-terminal solder* (Fig.
An iron needle (F), bent at both ends, is soldered

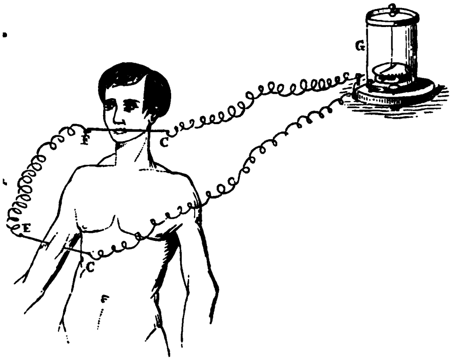
Fig. 30.



hese bent ends to two copper needles (C, C). With instrument he compared the temperature of a ng and a dead insect, as represented in Fig. 31.

ach insect was fixed on a stick, *d d*, planted in the h of a flower-pot *a*. The needles were then thrust e, to prove that the temperature of the mouth vary. The direction of the needle indicates in

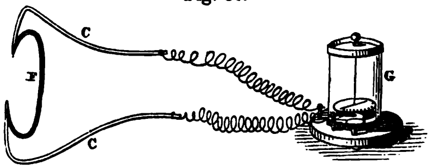
Fig. 29.



part there is an excess of heat; and this is after- calculated.

ther application of the same principle is that of het's *needles with latero-terminal solder* (Fig. An iron needle (F), bent at both ends, is soldered

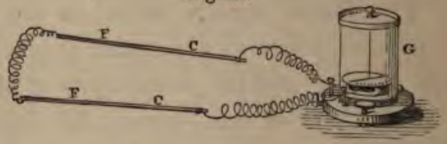
Fig. 30.



se bent ends to two copper needles (C, C). With istrument he compared the temperature of a and a dead insect, as represented in Fig. 31.

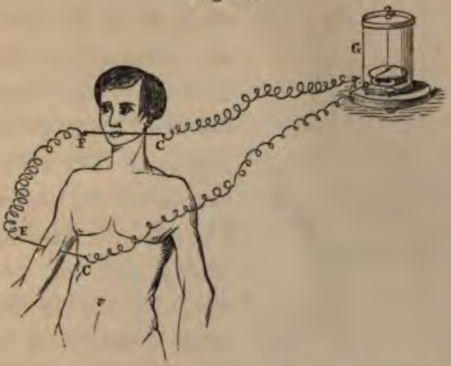
insect was fixed on a stick, *d d*, planted in the f a flower-pot *a*. The needles were then thrust current passes; and the magnetic needle of the galvanometer remains motionless. But the instant one of these solders is heated, the needle moves. It is on this principle that Becquerel invented his *thermo-electric needles with median solder* (Fig. 28). Each needle is composed of a copper and an iron half of equal length and thickness, soldered end to end. At one extremity each iron half (F) is united to the other by an iron wire, long enough to permit of their being kept at some distance apart; at the other extremity each copper half (C) is fixed to the wires of the galvanometer.

Fig. 28.



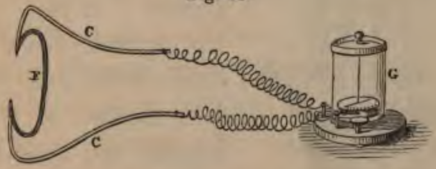
With such an instrument we are enabled to penetrate, without disturbance, into the interior of the animal tissues, and accomplish what no thermometer could attempt. We can test by it the temperature of a muscle, or of the blood in an artery, without troubling the circulation. For instance, let us desire to know the temperature of the muscles of the arm, at rest and in contraction. Fig. 29 will show the method of procedure. One needle is passed through the muscles; the other is placed in the mouth. The patient breathes only by the nostrils during the experiment; and all the time a small thermometer is placed under his tongue, to prove that the temperature of the mouth does not vary. The direction of the needle indicates in which part there is an excess of heat ; and this is afterwards calculated.

Fig. 29.



Another application of the same principle is that of Dutrochet's *needles with latero-terminal solder* (Fig. 30). An iron needle (F), bent at both ends, is soldered by these bent ends to two copper needles (C, C). With this instrument he compared the temperature of a living and a dead insect, as represented in Fig. 31.

Fig. 30.



Each insect was fixed on a stick, *d d*, planted in the earth of a flower-pot *a*. The needles were then thrust into corresponding parts of the living and dead insect, and being in communication with the galvanometer by the wires M N, the deviation of the galvanometer gave the measure of the temperature possessed by the living insect. The same instrument serves to measure the heat of plants, Fig. 32. An asparagus, c, is freshly cut and placed in water to keep it alive; another asparagus, *b*, is killed and the two are then tested as the living and dead insects were tested.

Fig. 31.

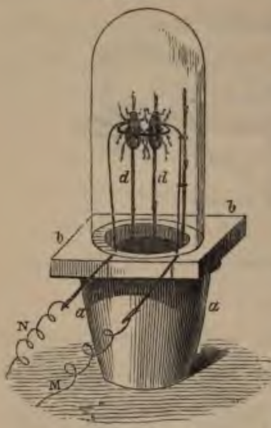
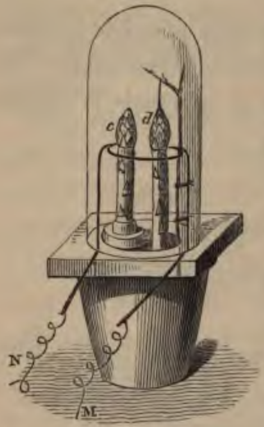


Fig. 32.



There are other methods unnecessary to mention here. The result which has been arrived at is that every living organism has within it a source of self-supplying heat. The amount of heat thus supplied will depend on the amount and nature of the chemical changes which take place within the organism. Even in the microscopic animalcules such a supply exists. We might assume this *a priori*, but we can establish it experimentally: if water be gradually frozen under the microscope, it will be seen that the last drops which solidify are those which surround the animalcules, and have been kept liquid by their heat.

Organic beings are thus distinguishable from the inorganic in possessing, as a necessary consequence of their vital activity, a self-supplying source of heat; and organic beings are distinguishable *among each other* by the rapidity with which this heat is *supplied*, and the facility with which it is *radiated;* and not, as the current classification implies, into animals with warm blood, animals with cold blood, and plants with no heat at all. There are no animals with cold blood, and all plants produce heat. But plants, except during their periods of germination and flowering, when they are sensibly warmer than the air, produce heat so slowly, and part with it so easily, that their temperature always follows that of the medium in which they live; and the so-called "cold-blooded animals" produce heat so slowly that they are never more than two or three degrees above the medium, and sometimes even *below* it, owing to the rapidity of evaporation from their surfaces. Insects—bees, for instance—produce heat with a rapidity equal to that of birds; but they part with it so rapidly that their temperature is little above that of the air. When bees are collected together in the hive, the heat they radiate is found to be very great.

Many writers object to the old distinction of warm and cold blooded animals as unphysiological, and suggest that the distinction should be, that the war blooded are independent of, and the cold-blooded dependent on, the external temperature : the one cla preserving its normal heat under all variations of th external medium, and the other class growing warm and colder as the external medium rises and falls. Fo against this distinction we would urge three argumen First,—Both classes of animals are dependent on th external temperature, and both are independent of i they are *dependent,* because it accelerates or ret their vital activities by which their own heat evolved ; they are *independent,* because whatever m be the amount of external heat or cold, their own tem perature, being really evolved in their vital proces is always restrained within certain limits, and almost always *somewhat* above that of the exter medium,* until a limit is reached, and then, if the e ternal temperature continue to increase, they perish, their heat falls below that of the medium.

Secondly,—The young of many warm-blooded a mals are as much dependent on external temper as frogs and fish ; and even the adult animals of th hybernating class are in this category : no sooner d the external temperature fall, than their heat sinks, a this depression continues till they are only three d grees warmer than the air.

---

* I once found the temperature of a "cold-blooded" lizard to be in the mouth, when the air was at 54°. A list of observations o temperature of the cold-blooded animals will be found in GAVAR *De la Chaleur produite par les êtres vivants,* p. 123.

Thirdly, — While the foregoing arguments have shown that the distinction is not tenable in the presence of facts, we would further remark that, granting the distinction to be valid, the cause would still have to be sought, and we should ask, why one class of animals was independent and another dependent on the external temperature? In fixing attention on the physiological differences of *rapid supply* and *rapid radiation*, as the real ground of distinction, we avoid the objections just brought forward; at the same time, inquiry into the cause of animal heat is disengaged from many a perplexing digression.

The marvellous balance between supply and loss exhibited by the human organism, and indeed by that of most warm-blooded animals, may be best seen in the following facts. Our temperature is 98°, and this is the standard, no matter what may be the external heat. In the tropics, the thermometer during several hours of the day is 110°. In British India it is sometimes as high as 130°. In the arctic zones it has been observed by our voyagers as low as 90°, *and even* 102°, *below freezing-point.* Nevertheless, amid such extensive variations of the external temperature, that of the human organism has but slightly varied, and a thermometer placed under the tongue of an arctic voyager will show the same degree of heat as one under the tongue of a soldier before the walls of Delhi. Throughout the scale of 200° which represents the variations of climate borne by our voyagers and soldiers, the average temperature of the human organism remains steady at

98°. We say *average*, because the same man is always at the same degree ; his temperature varie different seasons, different hours, and under differ conditions; and of course different men vary am themselves. Dr Livingstone remarks, "If my expe ments are correct, the blood of an European is hig than that of an African. The bulb of the thermo ter held under my tongue stood at 100° ; under that the natives, at 98°." * This was most likely nothi more than an individual difference ; but the point worth investigating.

It is the opinion of M. Gavarret, who has earned right to speak with authority on this subject, that in our moderate climates the temperature of the man will oscillate as much as a degree, *i.e.*, betw 36°.50 and 37°.50 centigrade.†

Although the organism can endure a heat gre than its own, yet this would soon be fatal if contin For a short period the excess of temperature can resisted ; and it is astonishing what a power of res ance we possess. Chabert, the once celebrated "Fi King," who used to exhibit in public, amazed his au ence by entering an oven, the heat of which was fr 400° to 600° ; and although we have no details as his own temperature when subject to that heat, we be sure that it could not have risen many degrees ab

---

* LIVINGSTONE'S *Travels in South Africa*, p. 509.

† GAVARRET: *De la Chaleur produite par les êtres vivants*, 185 100. This work is a perfect encyclopædia of information on the ject of Animal Heat. It is from it we have borrowed the figures above.

3°, otherwise he would have perished ; for the experi-
ents of Berger and Delaroche* prove that, when the
mperature of animals is raised 11° or 13° above the
rmal standard, they perish. Workers in iron-found-
es and gasworks are constantly obliged to remain for
me time in air which is as high as 250°, yet their
wn temperature remains tolerably uniform. A dog
nfined in a heated chamber at 220°-236°, in which
remained half an hour, was found to have gained
ly 7° ; and while the external temperature stood as
gh as 236°, his own stood only at 108°.

It thus appears that warm-blooded animals, besides
eir central source of heat, which keeps up their tem-
erature in spite of external cold, have also a cooling
pparatus by which their standard of heat is preserved
spite of excessive heat outside. What is this pro-
ss, which prevents the equilibrium of heat, and can
eep the animal temperature more than one hundred
d fifty degrees *below* that of the atmosphere? We
n easily understand why a kettle of water can be kept
boiling-point in a cold atmosphere, so long as a flame
underneath it ; but how can that water be kept *cold*
hen the temperature of the air is many degrees above
oiling-point? A man whose temperature is 98° in an
mosphere of 60°, suddenly steps into an atmosphere
200°, and yet his own warmth is scarcely elevated.
he ordinary explanation of this surprising fact is, that
e evaporation and exhalation of vapour and water

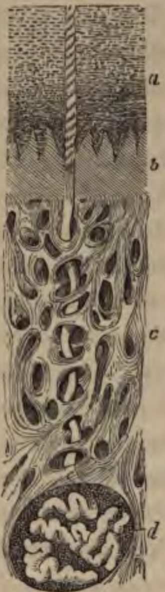
---

* Quoted by W. EDWARDS, *De l'Influence des Agens Physiques sur*
Vie.

from the surface are so accelerated by the exces heat, that they suffice to keep the man's temperat from rising. Let us look more closely into this.

All over the surface of our bodies there are scatte millions of minute orifices which op into the delicate convoluted tu lying underneath the skin, and called by anatomists *sudoripar glands* (Fig. 33). Each of th tubes, when straightened, meas about a quarter of an inch; and according to Erasmus Wilson, wh figures we follow, there are 352 these tubes on every square inch the palm of the hand, there must no less than 882 inches of tubing such a square inch. In some pa of the body the number of tube even greater; in most parts it less. Erasmus Wilson estimates th there are 2800 on every square in on the average; and as the to number of such inches is 2500 arrive at the astounding result th spread over the surface of the b there are not less than *twenty- miles of tubing*, by means of wh liquid may be secreted, and given off as vapou *insensible* perspiration, or as water in *sensible* p spiration. In the ordinary circumstances of daily

Fig. 33.



SWEAT-GLAND.

a is the cuticle or scarfskin (epidermis), the deeper layers, dark in colour, being the *rete mucosum*; *b* are the papillæ; *c* the cutis or true skin (derma); *d* the sweat-gland, in a cavity of oily globules.

e amount of fluid which is thus given off from the in (and lungs) during the twenty-four hours, varies om 1⅔ lb. to 5 lb.; under extraordinary circum-ances the amount will of course rise enormously. r Southwood Smith found that the workmen in the sworks employed in making up the fires, and other cupations which subjected them to great heat, lost an average 3 *lb.* 6 *oz.* in forty-five minutes; and en working for seventy minutes in an unusually t place, their loss was 5 *lb.* 2 *oz.*, and 4 *lb.* 14 *oz.*

Whatever stimulates the circulation of the blood the surface, will necessarily increase the action of e sweat-glands. A warm atmosphere or a warm th immediately causes the surface-circulation to be creased. Muscular exertion does the same. That e ordinary amount of evaporation and exhalation ll be greatly raised on our entrance into an atmos-ere of 200° is very certain; but the question is, hether this amount is sufficient of itself to account r the enormous difference between the temperature the animal and that of the atmosphere? We must member that not only is man's temperature more an 100° lower than iron or wood in such an at-osphere, but it is this amount lower *in spite of e incessant production of heat* taking place in his n organism, by the chemical changes on which vital- depends—a production of heat which will suffice preserve his temperature at the same height, if, on itting this atmosphere of 200°, he plunges into a ow-bath. For a short period a man can enter a

furnace the floor of which is red-hot, th
350°, yet his own heat will remain two h
fifty degrees *below* this ; and we cannot s
in this brief period, he has lost enough hea
ration to prevent his own temperature risi
then, is the cause ? We must confess i
answer this question. For some time we
explanation might be gained from the low-
power of the animal envelope, which woul
the external temperature from gaining acce
internal organs. Wrap a jug of ice in flannel
ice will not melt, even in a very warm room
considerable time has elapsed. It is on this
that, in China, they *bake ices.* An ice is enve
a crust of delicate pastry, and introduced
oven. The paste is quickly baked, and the
unmelted, having been protected from the he
envelope ; and thus the epicure has the de
biting through a burning crust, and then imm
cooling his palate with the grateful contents
although the envelope of the warm-blooded a
unquestionably a bad conductor, and would th
suffice to account for the animal's not getting
during a brief exposure to high temperature, th
planation fails when confronted with experiments
show that, during a longer exposure, the temp
has been still at its old limit. The following
ment by Berger and Delaroche is very instruct
They introduced into a furnace at 126°-143°
vase, containing two wet sponges and a fr

---

temperat
viously r
At the c
sponges,
ture, *wh*
mals ; a
ing two
standard
about a
much as
frog, sp
twenty
peratu
anima
ture
could
free
vase
very
ture
thei
poi
eva
po
a
m
gr
te

ture of the sponges and the vase had been pre-
raised to 101°-105° ; that of the frog was 70°.
close of the first fifteen minutes, the vase, the
, and the frog had almost an uniform tempera-
hich did not exceed that of warm-blooded ani-
and this was maintained pretty constant dur-
hours. It is remarkable that, to reach this
d, the vase and the sponges *fell* in temperature
degree and a half, whereas the frog rose as
s twenty-nine degrees in fifteen minutes. But
onges, and vase maintained themselves from
to forty-five degrees *below* the external tem-
e—namely, at the temperature of warm-blooded
. From this it would seem as if the tempera-
warm-blooded animals was the limit which
e reached by organic bodies coincident with a
aporation of water from their surfaces. The
d the sponges were introduced into a furnace
nsiderably higher than themselves in tempera-
nd this excess of heat caused an evaporation of
ater, which lowered their temperature to that
where the rapidly-rising temperature of the
ting frog would stop. Now, although the eva-
n from the surface of the frog would have had
g influence from the first minute of the experi-
et we see that this cooling influence was not
ough to withstand the rapid rise of the animal's
ture, until the point was reached at which the
the vase and sponges had ceased; and this
the very limit which we find uniformly in the

are of the sponges and the vase had been pre-
aised to 101°-105°; that of the frog was 70°.
ose of the first fifteen minutes, the vase, the
and the frog had almost an uniform tempera-
ch did not exceed that of warm-blooded ani-
nd this was maintained pretty constant dur-
hours. It is remarkable that, to reach this
, the vase and the sponges *fell* in temperature
degree and a half, whereas the frog rose as
s twenty-nine degrees in fifteen minutes. But
onges, and vase maintained themselves from
to forty-five degrees *below* the external tem-
e—namely, at the temperature of warm-blooded
. From this it would seem as if the tempera-
warm-blooded animals was the limit which
e reached by organic bodies coincident with a
poration of water from their surfaces. The
d the sponges were introduced into a furnace
nsiderably higher than themselves in tempera-
nd this excess of heat caused an evaporation of
ter, which lowered their temperature to that
vhere the rapidly-rising temperature of the
ting frog would stop. Now, although the eva-
n from the surface of the frog would have had
g influence from the first minute of the experi-
et we see that this cooling influence was not
ough to withstand the rapid rise of the animal's
ture, until the point was reached at which the
the vase and sponges had ceased; and this
the very limit which we find uniformly in the

furnace the floor of which is red-hot,
350°, yet his own heat will remain two
fifty degrees *below* this ; and we cannot
in this brief period, he has lost enough
ration to prevent his own temperature
then, is the cause? We must confess
answer this question. For some time
explanation might be gained from the low
power of the animal envelope, which wo
the external temperature from gaining
internal organs. Wrap a jug of ice in flan
ice will not melt, even in a very warm ro
considerable time has elapsed. It is on the
that, in China, they *bake ices.* An ice is en
a crust of delicate pastry, and introduced
oven. The paste is quickly baked, and the
unmelted, having been protected from the
envelope ; and thus the epicure has the
biting through a burning crust, and then im
cooling his palate with the grateful conte
although the envelope of the warm-blooded
unquestionably a bad conductor, and would
suffice to account for the animal's not gettin
during a brief exposure to high temperatur
planation fails when confronted with experim
show that, during a longer exposure, the t
has been still at its old limit. The follow
ment by Berger and Delaroche is very inst
They introduced into a furnace at 126°-14
vase, containing two wet sponges and a

ire of the sponges and the vase had been pre-
ised to 101°-105° ; that of the frog was 70°.
ose of the first fifteen minutes, the vase, the
and the frog had almost an uniform tempera-
ch did not exceed that of warm-blooded ani-
nd this was maintained pretty constant dur-
hours. It is remarkable that, to reach this
the vase and the sponges *fell* in temperature
degree and a half, whereas the frog rose as
twenty-nine degrees in fifteen minutes. But
onges, and vase maintained themselves from
to forty-five degrees *below* the external tem-
—namely, at the temperature of warm-blooded
. From this it would seem as if the tempera-
warm-blooded animals was the limit which
e reached by organic bodies coincident with a
aporation of water from their surfaces. The
d the sponges were introduced into a furnace
nsiderably higher than themselves in tempera-
nd this excess of heat caused an evaporation of
ater, which lowered their temperature to that
where the rapidly-rising temperature of the
ting frog would stop. Now, although the eva-
n from the surface of the frog would have had
g influence from the first minute of the experi-
et we see that this cooling influence was not
ough to withstand the rapid rise of the animal's
ture, until the point was reached at which the
the vase and sponges had ceased ; and this
the very limit which we find uniformly in the

furnace the floor of which is red-hot, the
350°, yet his own heat will remain two hun
fifty degrees *below* this; and we cannot supp
in this brief period, he has lost enough heat by
ration to prevent his own temperature rising
then, is the cause? We must confess inab
answer this question. For some time we fan
explanation might be gained from the low-con
power of the animal envelope, which would
the external temperature from gaining acces
internal organs. Wrap a jug of ice in flannel,
ice will not melt, even in a very warm room,
considerable time has elapsed. It is on this p
that, in China, they *bake ices*. An ice is enve
a crust of delicate pastry, and introduced i
oven. The paste is quickly baked, and the ic
unmelted, having been protected from the he
envelope; and thus the epicure has the de
biting through a burning crust, and then imm
cooling his palate with the grateful conten
although the envelope of the warm-blooded
unquestionably a bad conductor, and would
suffice to account for the animal's not getting
during a brief exposure to high temperature,
planation fails when confronted with experimen
show that, during a longer exposure, the temp
has been still at its old limit. The following
ment by Berger and Delaroche is very instru
They introduced into a furnace at 126°-143°
vase, containing two wet sponges and a fr

perature of the sponges and the vase had been pre-
sly raised to 101°-105°; that of the frog was 70°.
he close of the first fifteen minutes, the vase, the
ges, and the frog had almost an uniform tempera-
which did not exceed that of warm-blooded ani-
; and this was maintained pretty constant dur-
wo hours. It is remarkable that, to reach this
ard, the vase and the sponges *fell* in temperature
a degree and a half, whereas the frog rose as
as twenty-nine degrees in fifteen minutes. But
sponges, and vase maintained themselves from
y to forty-five degrees *below* the external tem-
ure—namely, at the temperature of warm-blooded
als. From this it would seem as if the tempera-
of warm-blooded animals was the limit which
be reached by organic bodies coincident with a
evaporation of water from their surfaces. The
and the sponges were introduced into a furnace
considerably higher than themselves in tempera-
and this excess of heat caused an evaporation of
water, which lowered their temperature to that
where the rapidly-rising temperature of the
rating frog would stop. Now, although the eva-
ion from the surface of the frog would have had
ling influence from the first minute of the experi-
yet we see that this cooling influence was not
enough to withstand the rapid rise of the animal's
erature, until the point was reached at which the
f the vase and sponges had ceased; and this
is the very limit which we find uniformly in the

furnace the floor of which is red-hot, the air being 350°, yet his own heat will remain two hundred and fifty degrees *below* this; and we cannot suppose that, in this brief period, he has lost enough heat by evaporation to prevent his own temperature rising. What, then, is the cause? We must confess inability to answer this question. For some time we fancied an explanation might be gained from the low-conducting power of the animal envelope, which would prevent the external temperature from gaining access to the internal organs. Wrap a jug of ice in flannel, and the ice will not melt, even in a very warm room, until a considerable time has elapsed. It is on this principle that, in China, they *bake ices*. An ice is enveloped in a crust of delicate pastry, and introduced into the oven. The paste is quickly baked, and the ice is still unmelted, having been protected from the heat by its envelope; and thus the epicure has the delight of biting through a burning crust, and then immediately cooling his palate with the grateful contents. But although the envelope of the warm-blooded animal is unquestionably a bad conductor, and would therefore suffice to account for the animal's not getting warmer during a brief exposure to high temperature, this explanation fails when confronted with experiments which show that, during a longer exposure, the temperature has been still at its old limit. The following experiment by Berger and Delaroche is very instructive:—They introduced into a furnace at 126°-143° a porous vase, containing two wet sponges and a frog. The temperature of the sponges and the vase had been previously raised to 101°-105°; that of the frog was 70°. At the close of the first fifteen minutes, the vase, the sponges, and the frog had almost an uniform temperature, *which did not exceed that of warm-blooded animals;* and this was maintained pretty constant during two hours. It is remarkable that, to reach this standard, the vase and the sponges *fell* in temperature about a degree and a half, whereas the frog rose as much as twenty-nine degrees in fifteen minutes. But frog, sponges, and vase maintained themselves from twenty to forty-five degrees *below* the external temperature—namely, at the temperature of warm-blooded animals. From this it would seem as if the temperature of warm-blooded animals was the limit which could be reached by organic bodies coincident with a free evaporation of water from their surfaces. The vase and the sponges were introduced into a furnace very considerably higher than themselves in temperature; and this excess of heat caused an evaporation of their water, which lowered their temperature to that point where the rapidly-rising temperature of the evaporating frog would stop. Now, although the evaporation from the surface of the frog would have had a cooling influence from the first minute of the experiment, yet we see that this cooling influence was not great enough to withstand the rapid rise of the animal's temperature, until the point was reached at which the fall of the vase and sponges had ceased; and this point is the very limit which we find uniformly in the warm-blooded animals, no matter what the external temperature may be.

The temperature of man is constant: neither the fluctuations of the seasons, nor the differences of latitude, bring any variation in his standard. No fact in science is better established; but we must guard against a misconception, and add, that when this temperature is spoken of as constant, it is not the heat of individual parts, nor of individual men at every hour of the day or under all circumstances, it is the *average* temperature of the internal organs. The limits of oscillation are narrow indeed, but within those limits the oscillation is incessant. I found that, when a thermometer is used which marks fractions of a degree so small as one-tenth, if placed in the mouth of a man or dog, it will exhibit an incessant oscillation; and it is well known that very obvious variations occur at different periods of the day, and under different circumstances. Dr John Davy found that, when at rest in a temperature of 37°, his own temperature fell as low as 96°.7; in a room at 92°, he found the heat of a workman had risen to 100°. Gierse observed that, before dinner, his temperature under the tongue was 98°.78, and after dinner, 99°.5.

Unsophisticated Reader.—"We want no scientific authority for the belief that variations take place, since the daily complaints of our fellow-citizens, shivering or perspiring, render the fact too obvious for thermometers to be needed."

Physiological Lecturer.—"Excuse me, sir; but you do want scientific authority. Without the thermometer, you cannot say whether you are warmer or colder than you were."

U. R.—"What! do you tell me I don't know when I feel colder?"

P. L.—"I only tell you that you don't know when you *are* colder. What you may *feel* is another question altogether. Thermometers do not measure feelings."

U. R.—"This is too much! You will tell me next that I ought to trust your thermometer, and distrust my sensations. Before venturing to light a fire in my room, I must place a thermometer under my tongue to see if I am really as cold as I feel; and next July, when I am sweltering in the sun, you will perhaps assure me that I am wrong to complain of the heat, since I am only at 98°—not a degree hotter than I was in December!"

P. L.—"O Unsophisticated Reader! if we are to talk science, let us be accurate. If we are to talk the language of the market and the dining-room, we shall never come to a clear understanding. Were you ever attacked by an intermittent fever?"

U. R.—"Yes; and remember distinctly the vehement shivering-fit which commenced it. Perhaps you will tell me I was not colder then, nor warmer when that fit disappeared and I seemed on fire, eh?"

P. L.—"Your ironical question warns me of your incredulity when I shall answer: No, you were *not* colder when you shivered under the heap of blankets which they in vain threw over you. You were some degrees warmer. The application of that thermometer, which you seem to treat lightly, would have shown that, whatever your sensations may have said, the actual heat of your skin had *risen six or seven degrees;* and when that sensation of cold was succeeded by a sensation of burning heat, the thermometer, which knows nothing of sensations, but measures heat only, would have shown that you were really not hotter than during the cold fit."

U. R.—"That is very staggering. But fevers are exceptional things, so let us come to ordinary life. Do you mean to say that, when I feel cold in winter, I am really not colder than when I come in from the walk which—according to my sensations—has warmed me?"

P. L.—"As an Unsophisticated Reader, liable to chilblains, your feet are doubtless colder and warmer under these two conditions; and the thermometer placed between your toes before you walk will show a temperature of 66° perhaps, while that of the air is 60°; and after the walk, the same test will show your feet to have risen as high as 96°.5. But if I regard you as a scientific *datum*, and think only of your Animal Heat as an average, I am forced to assure you that your temperature, variable in feet and hands, has remained constant in the blood and internal organs. A thermometer under your tongue would show 98° before and after your walk. Exercise had increased the circulation in your limbs, and consequently increased the warmth of those parts; but the source of your heat is the Blood, and that has not warmed or cooled with exercise. Dr John Davy found, after a walk in the open air at 40°, that the temperature of his feet rose to 96°.5 ; of his hands, to 97° ; while his tongue remained at 98°. Another day, after a walk in the air at 50°, his feet were 99°, his hands 98°, and tongue 98°. Here the feet were even warmer than the tongue. I can now answer your question without equivoque. When you feel colder, it is because the circulation in your extremities, or at the surface, is less active than usual, and either exercise or external warmth is necessary to restore that circulation ; but the temperature of your blood, and, consequently, of those internal parts more abundantly and constantly supplied with blood—in a word, your Animal Heat—remains unaltered."

Our Lecturer, had he been questioned, would have stated that, in spite of this remarkable constancy in animal heat, there are oscillations even in that of the internal organs. The temperature varies according to Age, Sex, Food, and other circumstances. We cannot, it is true, speak with any confidence as to the exact share which any one of these circumstances has in the variations observed ; the case is so complex, and implies the concurrence of so many separate influences, that considerable discrepancies will be found in the results attained by different investigators. Thus the majority of writers agree that in infancy the temperature is higher than in maturity. A thermometer under the armpit of a new-born infant will stand nearly at 100° ; and although it falls rapidly to 95°, yet in the course of the next four-and-twenty hours it will rise again to 99°.5. Between the ages of four months and six years, the average is 98°.9, and between the ages of six and fourteen it is 99°.16. On reading these figures the physiologist is tempted to see in them the simple expression of the fact that, during infancy and childhood, the growth is much more rapid than it afterwards is; and this rapidity of growth implies a greater production of heat, because a more rapid chemical action. Nevertheless, the extensive observations of M. Charles Martins * and W. F. Edwards † disturb the simplicity of this explanation, and cast some doubt on it. M. Martins, comparing the temperature of fifty-six ducks and ninety-seven geese, finds that in infancy it is somewhat *less* than in maturity. This fact is in direct contradiction to the physiological explanation; but it may possibly have some connection with the very important fact established by W. Edwards, namely, that young animals are distinguished from the adult less in the *degree* of heat which they attain than in their want of power to resist cold by *rapid production* of heat. This, as we attempted to show just now, is the distinguishing characteristic of what are called the warm-blooded and cold-blooded animals; and we shall now see that it is a characteristic of Age. Edwards removed a new-born puppy from its mother, and left it exposed to the air at 50°-60°. It rapidly grew cold, until at the expiration of three hours it was only two or three degrees above the temperature of the air. A similar result was observed with new-born rabbits, in a shorter space of time. With the new-born guinea-pig nothing of the kind was observed. It had a temperature equal to that of its mother; and this it preserved whether left with the mother or removed from her. Dogs, cats, rabbits, and other warm-blooded animals, therefore, seem in their earlier periods of existence to resemble the cold-blooded animals, and to be dependent on external warmth; but this is not true of all the warm-blooded classes. Edwards divides those classes into two groups, one of which comes into the world cold-blooded, the other warm-blooded. If we examine these groups closely, to discover some external sign by which they may severally be known, we find that one group comes into the world with its eyes closed, and the other with its eyes open. The reader, probably, thinks this sign of very small value, until we beg him further to remark that the puppy, whose temperature was so dependent on external warmth during the early part of its existence, becomes less and less so as he grows older, till at the end of a fortnight he is almost as capable as his parents of resisting external cold—and at this epoch his eyes are open. Thus the cold-blooded period is precisely coincident with the blind period.

---

* *Mémoire sur la Température des Oiseaux du Nord,* in BROWN-SÉQUARD: *Journal de la Physiologie,* i. 22.

† W. EDWARDS: *De l'Influence des Agens Physiques,* p. 132.

Is, then, Animal Heat dependent upon vision?—is it in any degree regulated by vision? The phenomena are, indeed, intimately connected, but their connection is not that of cause and effect: it is that of two effects determined by one cause. Animal Heat is evolved by the vital changes which take place in the organism; and only when that organism has attained a certain degree of development has it the power of evolving sufficient heat to resist external cold: now, the development of the eyes is an indication of the degree of development reached by the organism, and no sooner is the animal sufficiently developed to use its eyes, than it is also sufficiently developed to preserve its normal temperature. The young puppy cannot see, and is forced to remain near its mother to be warmed by her; but the young guinea-pig sees perfectly well, and runs about seeking food for itself. It is the same with birds. Young sparrows, taken from the nest where they were kept warm by their mother and by each other, rapidly lost about 30°, although the external air was moderate (63°), so that their own temperature fell to three degrees above that of the air. A similar result was obtained with the air at 72°. As these birds are born without feathers, their loss of heat might be supposed to be owing to the absence of the warm covering which protected their parents. It is not so, however. Edwards completely stripped an adult sparrow of its feathers, and exposed it to air at 65°, in company with a young sparrow taken from the nest; the young one had the advantage of down, and in some parts of feathers to protect it, nevertheless its temperature quickly fell to two or three degrees above that of the air, while that of the adult scarcely varied, and remained 36° above that of the air. Although the young sparrows, and those birds which are born imperfectly developed, require the heat of the nest and of their mother, the young chick preserves its temperature as well as the grown hen ; but the chick quits the egg in a state of development which permits it to run about and feed itself.

Have these facts any application to man ? Are *we* born cold-blooded, like blind puppies ? Not exactly ; yet the same laws are in operation in our organisms as in the organisms of the puppy and the sparrow. Edwards relates that one of his patients gave birth to a seven-months child, with such ease that the child came before assistance could be got. He arrived two or three hours afterwards, and found the child vigorous, well swaddled in clothes before a good fire ; yet its temperature, even under these circumstances, was only 90°, or five degrees below that of the average of a child born at the proper period. Every precaution was taken to keep the infant warm ; had not such precautions been taken, it would have perished as a puppy would have perished.

Maternal instinct has in all ages and in all climates taught women to keep their infants warm. Philosophers have at various times tried, by logic and rhetoric, to thwart this instinct. Philosophy has been eloquent on the virtue of making infants "hardy," and has declared that cold baths and slight clothing must be as "strengthening" to the infant as to the adult. Listen to none of these philosophers, ye mothers ! They are to be suspected when they are talking physiology, for under such circumstances they are the worst of guides, deceiving themselves and you by that fatal facility which intellectual power gives them of making ignorance look like knowledge, and of so speciously arraying absurdity that it looks like plain common-sense. It is bad, very bad, to listen to grandmothers, mothers-in-law, and nurses: their heads are mostly mere lumber-rooms of crotchets and absurdities; but it is better sometimes to listen to them than to philosophers who inspire more respect, and cannot irreverently be treated as "old women." Maternal instinct must not be perverted by such unphysiological teaching as that of "hardening" infants. It is true that strong infants can endure this process, but it is certain that in all cases it is more or less injurious; for the universal law is, that the younger the animal, the feebler its power of *resisting* cold, in spite of its possessing a higher temperature than the adult.

An interesting fact is elicited by Edwards from his researches, namely, that although the younger the animal the less its ability to resist cold, this peril is to a great extent evaded by the comparative impunity with which the young animals can be subjected to a fall in their temperature. The adult better resists external cold; but if the resistance be overcome, there is greater difficulty in re-establishing the normal heat. In proportion as the faculty of developing heat increases, the faculty of developing it after a considerable fall decreases. One sees the beneficial operation of this law in nature. The most careful bird is forced to quit her young from time to time in search of food, and during her absence they necessarily become colder; if she is absent long, or if the nest be not very warm, they will undergo a loss of heat which would be perilous to an adult. But no sooner does she return to warm them, than they regain their temperature with facility.

Old people are commonly said to have a lower temperature than those of middle age; but Dr Davy's observations do not confirm this; he found no such difference, nor are we aware of any evidence by which the notion can be established. It is true that cold is not so well resisted in old age. Herein old age and infancy agree.

The influence of *Sex* has not been much investigated; yet, considering the differences in the blood and respiration of the sexes, we might expect to find some striking results elicited from a careful comparison of temperatures. The only extensive investigations with which we are acquainted are those of M. Martins, previously cited: from one hundred and ten observations on ducks and drakes, he finds the temperature of the females to be somewhat higher than that of the males; but their temperature is also more *variable*, differing between individuals more than is the case with the males. Between women and men there seems to be no appreciable difference, which is the more striking from the known differences in their blood and respiration.

"Food is warmth," says the physiologist; and in one sense this is strictly true, namely, that Food, by rendering a continuance of the vital processes possible, must bring with it the heat to be evolved in those processes. But it is *not* true in the sense in which the aphorism is frequently employed, namely, that Food is the fuel which is burned for animal heat (like coke in a furnace), and that particular kinds, the so-called Respiratory Foods, are those we ought to employ as fuel. The warmth you feel after eating a hearty dinner is not really an increase of your temperature, but a *diffusion* of it to the extremities and the surface. Place a thermometer under your tongue before dinner and after it, and you will find that, in spite of your sensations, the thermometer points to the same degree at each period. Yet, as this admits of another interpretation, we shall adduce the less equivocal observations of M. Martins. The ducks belonging to a miller near Montpellier were fed well on grains every morning before being turned out to enjoy themselves in the river, and every evening on their return they were fed again; close by, there lived a poor waiter on the lock, who also kept ducks, but could not afford to feed them on grains, like his richer neighbour, so that they were reduced to forage for themselves. Here accident had arranged the conditions of a good scientific experiment. Living in the same air, the same temperature, and in the same lock of the river, these two flocks differed only in respect of the grain on which one was daily fed. The influence of food would, therefore, here be manifest. What did observation detect? A superiority of temperature amounting nearly to a degree centigrade (about

1⅘° Fahr.) in favour of the well-fed ducks. M. Martins adds that he has since then often been able to affirm whether a bird has been well or ill fed, by simply ascertaining its temperature.

On a superficial consideration, this would seem to be convincing evidence that those physiologists are correct who assert "food to be warmth," in the crude sense of food being fuel; but closer attention will show that the evidence supports our view of food. Indeed, M. Martins has furnished us with irresistible evidence; "for," as he remarks, "we shall greatly deceive ourselves if we imagine that a better quality of food will suffice to raise the temperature in *a short period.* Two drakes, after five days of abstinence, were found to have a temperature of 41°.83 centigrade (about 107° Fahr.); I then fed them entirely on bran and herbs, and twenty-five days afterwards their temperature was 42°.14 (not quite 108° Fahr.) Two other drakes, with a temperature of 41°.40, were fed abundantly on maize and hay: at the end of twenty-five days of such diet their temperature was 41°.76"—that is to say, actually *less* than those which had been ill fed! This may seem to be in contradiction with M. Martins' previous observation on the well-fed and ill-fed ducks; but the contradiction is only superficial: the reader will notice that, although the temperature of these well-fed drakes was actually less than that of the ill-fed, it was also less when the experiment began; and if we compare the rise in the temperature which took place in both, we shall find that in the ill-fed it was only 0°.30, and in the well-fed

0°.36. This difference, slight as it may seem, is in favour of the well-fed; and when such slight elevations are continued month after month, they may, and will, attain a superiority amounting to one degree. Although, therefore, this experiment confirms the previous observation of the influence of generous food in elevating the degree of animal heat, it strikingly discredits the notion that the food is burned as fuel in the organism.

"Food is warmth," because food furnishes the pabulum of the tissues, and warmth is evolved in the chemical changes which go forward in the formation and destruction of the tissues. But food is not fuel only, as some physiologists would have us believe. If anything is burnt, it is the tissues, not the food; our warmth comes from the organic processes which make and unmake the tissues. The proof of this is seen, not only in the foregoing experiments, but even more convincingly in the experiments on starvation which Chossat and Martins have performed. We shall not here repeat those of Chossat, because they are well known, and the results are accessible in almost every text-book; but those of Martins will be new to our readers, and may therefore briefly be indicated. He took four drakes, and submitted them to several successive periods of abstinence, separated by periods in which they were abundantly fed. They were left in a tub of water in which to bathe, and their habits were unaltered; nothing but the solid food was withheld during the days of the experiment; and in order to avoid the diurnal variations of temperature from complicating the problem, the thermometer was always applied at the same hour of each day. The birds commenced the period of fasting with a temperature of 42°.20 (108° Fahrenheit), at the close of a period of ample nourishment.

After 24 hours' abstinence the temperature *sank* to 41°.84.
„ 48 „ „ „ *rose* to 41°.89.
„ 72 „ „ „ *rose* to 41°.91.
„ 96 „ „ „ *rose* to 41°.94.
„ 120 „ „ „ *sank* to 41°.62.

Here we see that twenty-four hours' fast have produced a striking reduction of temperature; and those writers who attribute warmth to the combustion of food may fancy they see evidence for their opinion in such a fact; but, as the fast is prolonged, the temperature does not continue falling; it rises: so that, after ninety-six hours of complete abstinence, the temperature has risen nearly to what it was when the animal was crammed with food. We have only to add, that this is in perfect accordance with the observations of Chossat on pigeons. It is true that, after the fifth day, the temperature suddenly sinks; but the mere increase, as the abstinence is prolonged during the first four days, is sufficient to show that animal heat is not evolved by the combustion of food.

Having examined the influence of Age, Sex, and Food, we may now cast a glance at the influence of the Seasons. Although man preserves his standard of 98° in the tropics and in the arctic zone, he does so in

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY
STANFORD UNIVERSITY
MEDICAL CENTER
STANFORD, CAL.

virtue of the power his organism possesses of adjusting itself to changing circumstances. We adjust ourselves to the changing seasons. In winter we are as warm as in summer, because in winter we produce more heat, and lose less by evaporation and exhalation. A cold day in summer is incomparably more unpleasant and injurious than a day of equal temperature in autumn; and the coldest day in summer would be mild to us in winter. The reason is, that in summer the cold day finds us unprepared. The organism during summer has been adjusting itself to the production of less and less heat, and if a cold day now occur, we have less power of resistance; we are somewhat in the condition of the infant animal, which has not yet acquired its full power of heat-making. It is on this principle that we may explain the death of animals exposed during summer to a degree of cold which in winter would scarcely lower their temperature.

We are not all blessed with the same capacity for rapidly developing heat; we are not all blessed with the same activity of the circulation. Yet each is apt to make himself the standard. B. shivers, and complains of the cold; thinks he must have the fire lighted, though it be June. C. is amazed that any one can possibly be cold on such a day; C. is quite warm. Perhaps, after reading these pages, B. will learn to understand that it is quite possible for C. to be comfortable in this temperature; and C. will learn to sympathise with the less fortunate B.'s, who shiver when he is warm. The differences may arise from two causes:

the heat-producing capacity may be less, or the circulation feebler. The stimulus of the external cold increases the activity of the organic processes in one man, and depresses it in another. That this is the real cause, will appear on examining the influence of cold on the various classes of warm-blooded animals. One class—the hybernaters—is so incapable of resisting cold by an adequate increase of its own temperature, that it falls into a torpor; other classes are forced to seek external warmth in nests and holes, as we seek it in warm clothing and heated rooms; others, again, need nothing but their own temperature. In spite of the active respiration of a mouse, it needs a warm nest, and, unless in active exercise, will perish if exposed to a temperature which we should consider moderate: we, again, should perish in a temperature which the cat or dog could endure without uneasiness.

Among men there are some who resemble the mouse, and others who resemble the cat. The slightest fall of temperature causes the first to put on warmer clothing, or to light the fire; at which their robuster friends are liberal in sarcastic allusions, spoken or thought, and are somewhat impatient of this "coddling." These sarcastic friends are the cats.

It is important to bear in mind, however, that this inadequate production of heat does not always translate itself by the expression of "chilliness;" the effect of cold is often totally unlike that of a chilly sensation: it produces a vague uneasiness, a feeling of depression, resulting from the lowering of the organic activity;

and many periodic forms of disease are probably connected therewith. Without positively "feeling cold," the person so affected need only enter a well-warmed apartment, to be at once aware of a reinvigorated condition.

There is a misconception respecting cold which may here be rectified. Capt. Parry tells us that with the thermometer at 55° below zero — that is to say, 87° below freezing-point,—if no wind be stirring the hands may remain uncovered for a quarter of an hour without inconvenience; whereas with a fresh breeze, even when the thermometer is at zero, few persons can keep the hands exposed without pain. The fact is familiar to all, that wind makes the bitterness of a winter day; and that even in summer an east wind is bitter and sometimes painful. But why is it so? Why are our sensations at variance with the thermometer? Why do we *feel* the cold to be greater on a windy day? The reason is that we *are* colder; we *feel* the cold to be greater because our loss of heat is more rapid. The air is a bad conductor, and unless it be blowing upon us, thus continually bringing fresh air in contact with our warm bodies, we produce heat fast enough to replace what is carried off; but when the air carries off heat faster than we can produce it,—when the evaporation from our skin is more rapid than the replacement, then we have a continuous sensation of cold, because then our skin really is cold. A dry wind, like the east wind, is cold because it promotes a rapid evaporation; a moist wind, like the west wind, is warm because its moisture retards evaporation.

Dr Watson, in his Lectures, gives a very useful caution against the readiness with which we may confound the effects of long exposure to cold with those of intoxication. "There is too much reason to believe that poor wretches, who have been picked up by the constables in the streets at night during periods of hard frost, have been supposed to be drunk, when in truth they were only stupefied by cold."*

When is cold dangerous? It is always dangerous when continuous: a dash of cold water, or of cold air, produces a reaction; but a continued chilliness will produce disease. There is a danger in wet feet, but this danger, as every one knows, does not reach the sportsman, or the pedestrian, unless he sit still with wet feet; it is the chilliness which comes on when evaporation is not compensated by production of warmth, that causes the evil. Again, it is dangerous to drink cold water after violent exercise; but not at all dangerous to drink it during the exercise, before the body has begun to cool. The organism can withstand the most sudden alternations of heat and cold, but they must be sudden, and the organism must be in vigour. A Russian heats himself in a vapour bath and immediately plunges into snow. But if he were to wait some minutes after quitting the vapour bath, and allow his body to begin cooling, the snow bath would probably kill him.

---

* WATSON: *Practice of Physic*, i. 91.

THEORY OF ANIMAL HEAT.—It will be necessary to devote a few paragraphs to that theory of "Why we are warm, and how we keep so," which has obtained general acceptance. There is indeed a powerful and ever-increasing minority which rejects that theory, and as this minority seems to me to have the best of the argument, I will first state what the theory is, and then briefly criticise it.

Animal Heat, it is said, is the effect of which Respiration is the cause. In Respiration, oxygen is absorbed, which burns the carbon of the food into carbonic acid, and the hydrogen into water; in these acts of oxidation, heat is generated, for no combination of a combustible substance with oxygen can take place without disengaging heat. No matter whether such oxidations take place in the body or out of it, rapidly or slowly, at a low temperature or at a high one, the amount of heat set free by the combination of a given quantity of oxygen with a given quantity of carbon or hydrogen, is always and everywhere the same. The oxidation of the carbon of the food will liberate precisely as much heat as if, instead of being spread over a long time, the combustion had taken place in a vessel of pure oxygen. Chemistry assures us of these facts. Physiology assures us that oxygen is incessantly absorbed in the lungs, and that carbonic acid and water are as incessantly exhaled; and further assures us that, concurrently with this absorption of oxygen and exhalation of carbonic acid and water, there is an amount of heat generated which would be generated by an equivalent combustion of carbon and hydrogen out of the organism. "It is obvious," says Liebig, "that the amount of heat liberated must increase or diminish with the quantity of oxygen introduced in equal times by respiration. Those animals, therefore, which respire frequently, and consequently consume much oxygen, possess a higher temperature than others, which, with a body of equal size to be heated, take into the system less oxygen."

Such is the so-called "chemical theory of Animal Heat." We have already seen how little confidence is to be given to the notion of the food being burnt in the organism; and when, therefore, we hear "the carbon of the food" spoken of as passing into carbonic acid, and disengaging heat, we must, if we accept the theory, declare that what is burnt is the carbon of the tissues made from that food. The oxygen which is absorbed in the lungs does not then and there combine with carbon in the blood, and generate its due amount of heat; this, which was formerly believed, is now given up by all competent physiologists. In giving up this idea, we must follow the course of the oxygen in the blood, until we detect it, *flagrante delicto*, in the act of burning the carbon; but this has hitherto escaped all research. *We are in utter ignorance as to the origin of carbonic acid in the organism.* We have many plausible explanations as to how it *may* arise, but how it *does* arise we do not know. It is extremely doubtful, according to Robin and Verdeil, whether *any* direct oxidation of carbon takes place at all, and is quite certain that much of the carbonic acid is not so produced.[*] Without venturing further on ground so delicate, we will sum up in the words of the distinguished chemist Regnault, who has specially studied this question: "It was long believed (and many chemists still believe it) that the heat produced by an animal in a given time is precisely equal to that which would be produced by the burning in oxygen of the same amount of carbon and hydrogen which is found in the carbonic acid and water exhaled in that time. It is very probable that animal heat is entirely produced *by the chemical actions which take place in the organism*, but the phenomenon is too complex to admit of our calculating it according to the quantity of oxygen consumed."[†] The simple fact that the carbonic acid exhaled, at times, contains *more* oxygen than has been absorbed, although perfectly intelligible when we remember the influence of food on the exhalation of carbonic acid, is of itself enough to destroy all confidence in such calculations.

As an example of the heat which is formed in the organism by the processes of life, not reducible to mere oxidations, let us consider the simple fact of muscular contraction. That heat is liberated every time a muscle contracts is well known, and the experiments of Matteucci and Helmholtz show that this heat is quite independent of any circulation of the blood. The former placed several frogs' legs in a glass and surrounded a thermometer with them; on irritating their nerves so as to produce muscular contractions, the temperature rose in the glass. Now unless it be maintained that oxidation necessarily precedes or accompanies every contraction of a muscle, it will be obvious that oxidation is not the sole source of Animal Heat; and when we reflect on the enormous amount of muscular contractions of all kinds which take place within the organism, we shall see that from this source alone a large amount of heat must arise. The same is true of all organic processes.

---

[*] ROBIN *et* VERDEIL: *Traité de Chimie Anatomique*, ii. 38 *seq.*, 87, 168, 462, and iii. 185 *seq.* Compare also BERNARD: *Liquides de l'Organisme*, i. 441 *seq.*, on the absence of proof that water is formed in the organism.

[†] REGNAULT: *Cours Elémentaire de Chimie*, ii. 868.

While, therefore, it is still undecided whether carbonic acid and water arise in the organism by a process of direct oxidation, the theory of Animal Heat, which is based on such an assumption, must necessarily be held questionable. Meanwhile we may look a little closer into the evidence which declares that Animal Heat is the direct product of Respiration, rising and falling with it, dependent on it, as effect upon cause. That a mass of evidence can be adduced is perfectly true, because, whatever theory we may form, we must still perceive that *an* intimate relation necessarily exists between Respiration and Animal Heat; if only on the ground that all vital processes are intimately related, and in the organism one function is necessarily dependent on another. The question, however, is not whether *an* intimate relation exists; but whether *the* causal relation exists, whether the two phenomena are in invariable correspondence, the one never feeble when the other is energetic—the one never acting after the other has ceased.

Disregarding the mass of evidence which may be adduced in favour of the correspondence, let us here fix our attention solely on some striking exceptions. The cases are by no means very rare in which a corpse has preserved a high temperature for many hours; and as Respiration must altogether have ceased, these cases have great significance for us. Dr Livingstone mentions a case which came under his own eye, of a Portuguese lady, who died of fever at three o'clock in the morning of the 26th April. "The heat of the body continued unabated till six o'clock, when I was called in, and I found her bosom as warm as ever I did in a living case of fever. This continued for three hours more. As I had never seen such a case in which fever-heat continued so long after death, I delayed the funeral till unmistakable symptoms of dissolution occurred." Mr George Redford informed me of a case which he had under his own eye. A soldier, given to drink, died, I forget from what cause, and the next day Mr Redford was quite startled at finding the body still warm. Dr Bennett Dowler, of New Orleans, has likewise observed that, in many cases, the temperature *rises* after death; and as these observations are cited by so eminent an authority as Professor Dunglison, we must give them a credit which might perhaps be refused to the cases previously mentioned. Dr Dowler found that where the highest temperature during life was 104° under the armpit, it rose to 109° in ten minutes after death; fifteen minutes afterwards it was 113° in an incision in the thigh; in one hour forty minutes, it was 109° in the heart. Three hours after all the viscera had been removed, an incision in the thigh showed the temperature to be 110°.

When we remember that, even after death, processes of growth and secretion have been observed to take place, there is nothing incredible in these examples of continued heat after death; but we cannot see how the advocates of the Respiration theory reconcile such facts as the complete absence of Respiration during several hours, with no diminution of Animal Heat. According to theory, the two phenomena are in immediate dependence, the intensity of heat corresponding with the energy of respiration; but here there is no respiration, nor has there been any for some hours, yet the heat continues to be produced. If it is said that the oxygen breathed during life suffices to keep up the oxidation after death; the answer is, that on this reasoning *all* bodies should continue warm many hours after death.

There are, moreover, numerous facts which show a similar want of correspondence between the energy of respiration and the intensity of heat. In tetanus, for example, the temperature has been known to rise to 110°—an amazing height; yet no corresponding increase of respiration is noted. In women the energy of Respiration is strikingly inferior to that in men; according to Barral, 40 per cent less. Yet, alth they "burn" so much less carbon than men, their temperature is scarcely lower, if lower at all. We lay more stress on this fact, because it is the expression of the normal condition of the organism. In all cases of disease there is a possibility of some totally new conditions which render our inferences inapplicable; but in the natural breathing of ordinary men and women we may expect to see the unobstructed action of the law which connects Respiration with Animal Heat. According to theory, women ought to have a very much lower temperature than men, for they exhale very much less carbonic acid in respiration, and must therefore "burn" less carbon. According to fact, women have as high a temperature as men. It looks plausible when we read that the amount of heat liberated must increase or diminish with the quantity of oxygen introduced in equal times by respiration; yet this plausibility becomes troubled when we find Animal Heat sometimes bearing no such relation to the amount of inspired oxygen. The woman is as warm as the man, with feebler respiration.

When we take a general survey of the animal kingdom, the correspondence between energetic respiration and high temperature is very striking, and affords that evidence to which allusion was made just now in favour of the current theory. The cold-blooded animals are all feeble breathers, and the most energetic breathers are the warmest-blooded. A mollusc, a fish, a frog, a quadruped, and a bird, represent the various stages of this correspondence. The absorption of oxygen is smallest in the mollusc, and greatest in the bird. The mollusc has the temperature of the medium in which it lives, or is so slightly raised above it that our ordinary instruments detect no elevation. The bird keeps a constant temperature of 110°.

So long as we content ourselves with such generalities, the evidence is ample. Indeed, we might, *a priori*, conclude that a general correspondence would necessarily be observed, because of the general connection which two organic functions always exhibit; but no sooner do we descend from generals to particulars —no sooner do we compare animals with each other, than the correspondence suddenly ceases to lend its aid to the theory. It is true, as a general fact, that birds have a higher temperature and more energetic respiration than quadrupeds. It is true, moreover, as a general fact, that in birds the highest temperature is found in those of the most energetic respiration, the active hawk or swallow being warmer than the barn-door fowl; but this is true only as a general fact: and if we continue comparing birds together, we shall find that the active predatory petrel has uniformly a much *lower* temperature than the domestic duck. Here the correspondence suddenly fails. "If we bear in mind the current ideas respecting the production of animal heat," says Brown-Séquard, parenthetically, "there is assuredly something strange in the fact that the class of birds to which the petrel belongs has not a higher temperature than we find to be the case. The active life of these birds, their extreme vigour, the rapidity of their flight, their food, so rich in fatty principles, and the warm climate in which many of them live, are so many circumstances which ought to give them a high temperature." As M. Brown-Séquard does not doubt the current theory, he is inclined to attribute this discrepancy to the occasional fasts which these birds are subject to. Being, on the whole, less well fed than domestic ducks, they are therefore, he thinks, lower in temperature. This will doubtless have its influence; yet differences in the temperature of birds cannot be wholly attributed to it: for, as M. Martins finds, ducks have a higher temperature than geese. Now, inasmuch as the goose is as well fed as the duck, as well covered with feathers, and as energetic in respiration, we should, *a priori*, expect it to have a higher temperature than the duck, because it is a general law that the smaller the animal the greater the rapidity with which it parts with its heat; yet the inexorable thermometer shows the duck to have a higher temperature than the goose.

A mouse eats eight times as much food, in proportion to its size, as a man, and its respiration is, according to Valentin,* eighteen times more energetic; yet its temperature is little higher than that of man, and its power of resistance to cold is incomparably lower. Birds eat six to ten times as much as a man, in proportion to weight, respire much more vigorously, and lose less heat by evaporation; nevertheless, they are only a few degrees higher, and their power of resistance to cold is in general much less. Valentin says that a dog consumes twice as much oxygen as a man, in proportion; yet the difference in their temperature is very slight.

---

* VALENTIN: *Text-Book of Physiology* (translated by W. BRINTON), p. 351.

These illustrations suffice to show that no invariable constancy can be found between Respiration and Animal Heat: even should the theory we are criticising ultimately turn out to be correct, the objections we have urged will still retain their force, not, indeed, against the truth of the theory, but against its inconsiderate interpretation; they will retain their value as indications of the presence of *physiological conditions,* and will show how varieties in the organism modify the operation of the general physical laws; thus removing the question of Animal Heat from the hands of the Chemist, and replacing it in the hands of the Physiologist. Treating the question as a physiological one, we are forced to consider Animal Heat as determined by the energy of two processes, one of production and another of radiation. Some organisms produce heat more rapidly than others, and some part with it more rapidly. The temperature of the organism will be determined by a balance of these processes. Insects produce heat with great rapidity; but they part with it so rapidly that their temperature is as low as that of the reptile, which produces heat slowly. The hybernating animals part with their heat more rapidly than other warm-blooded classes—part with it too rapidly for the maintenance of their necessary warmth when the external temperature falls, and thus, the

balance being destroyed, they sink into the condition of cold-blooded animals. If a young bird and an adult of the same species be exposed to the same degree of cold, although they have both the same temperature at starting, the young bird will in a short period be found to have a much *lower* temperature than the adult, because its production of heat has not been sufficiently rapid to keep pace with the loss. The physiological causes which determine this rapid loss in the insect, the hedgehog, and the young bird, have yet to be investigated, and may at once be surmised to be different in each case. In the insect, the rapid loss is probably owing to the smallness of its size, and the free penetration of the air through its body. In the hedgehog and young bird, the actual loss may not be greater than in other animals of the same size; but the effect of cold on their organisms may be such as to materially retard those processes on which the production of heat depends. So clearly is the production of heat regulated by the general condition of the organism, that, at different seasons of the year, the same organism will produce different amounts of heat at the same temperature. In winter, the organism is in its greatest heat-producing condition; in summer at its lowest. If subjected in summer to a temperature of zero, its power of resistance will be found very inadequate to such a degree of cold; whereas in winter its power of resistance is so great as to make this degree of cold perfectly endurable. The usual explanation is, that there is a greater amount of oxygen contained in a

similar volume of air in winter than in summer, so that at each inspiration a greater amount of combustion is rendered possible. But this is unsatisfactory. In the first place, in winter as in summer, the temperature of the mouth and lungs is constant, and the cold air entering would be warmed before the oxygen reached the blood; so that, unless the oxygen is in a different condition in winter than in summer (as some maintain), no solid argument can rest on the difference of the temperature of the air. In the second place, the experiments of W. Edwards do not admit of being thus explained. He placed sparrows in a glass vase, the air of which was maintained at freezing-point, in the months of February and July. This air, consequently, contained the same amount of oxygen in each case: and as the apparatus was in each case the same, and the birds the same, every variation in the result would be owing to the temporary condition of the organisms. In February the temperature of the birds only fell one degree centigrade during the first hour, remaining stationary there during the two succeeding hours; whereas in July it fell more than three degrees in the first hour, and continued to fall till the close of the third hour, when it had lost as much as six degrees. This experiment by no means tallies with the proposition laid down by Liebig, that "in different climates the quantity of oxygen introduced into the system by respiration, varies according to the temperature of the external air; the quantity of oxygen inspired increases with the loss of heat by external cooling; and the

his head above water. As the season advances, the water-newt also feels the need of occasionally quitting the water, and he will lie basking on the bit of stone or wood for hours together, descending into the water as the coolness of evening descends. To keep him under water for many hours in the hot weather, is to kill him. It is the same with frogs and toads; and the reason was made clear to us by the experiments of W. Edwards. He found that as long as the temperature of the water is no more than fifteen or sixteen degrees above freezing-point (47°-48°), frogs will live the whole year round without once rising to the surface. In this condition they *breathe only by the skin.* He has shown the relation which surface-respiration bears to pulmonary respiration in these animals; and he finds that the skin exhales sufficient carbonic acid, and absorbs sufficient oxygen, to supply all their needs of languid life at this temperature. No sooner does the temperature of the water rise, than the vital activity of the frog increases; and with this increase there is a greater need of oxygen, a greater production of carbonic acid—in other words, a greater energy of Respiration, for which the skin no longer suffices, the lungs are called upon to do their work; they cannot do this work in the water; and if the frog be prevented from rising to the surface, it is prevented from breathing, and it perishes. We see this in spring. The frog, or newt, occasionally rises to expire carbonic acid, and absorb oxygen by its lungs. It then dives under the surface again. As the season

quantity of carbon or hydrogen necessary to combine with this oxygen must be increased in the same ratio;" for, on the contrary, we see here that the same temperature of the external air will at different seasons lower the temperature of the same bird *one* degree or *six* degrees. The cause cannot lie in the external air and its amount of oxygen, but in the organism, and its different conditions in winter and summer.

Has it never occurred to you, when standing beside a pond in early spring, that there was something paradoxical in the fact of frogs and toads crawling at the bottom, and never once rising to the surface to breathe? They are animals with lungs, and in summer live mostly on land, perishing, indeed, if unable to get out of the water from time to time; yet during the whole winter, late autumn, and early spring, they pass their time under water. Puzzled by this fact, we applied to a zoologist for an explanation, and received in reply one of those explanations with which the majority of mankind are willing to be content, namely, a restatement of the fact in different language. Our own experiments and observations gave no explanation. We found, for instance, the two species of newt—land and water newts—behave very differently. Both have gills when young, and lungs in a more developed condition. When the gills of the land-newt disappear, the possibility of living under water disappears: the animal quits the water for ever, and you meet him on your staircase, while his companion the water-newt is still in the aquarium, and only occasionally thrusting

his head above water. As the season advances, the water-newt also feels the need of occasionally quitting the water, and he will lie basking on the bit of stone or wood for hours together, descending into the water as the coolness of evening descends. To keep him under water for many hours in the hot weather, is to kill him. It is the same with frogs and toads; and the reason was made clear to us by the experiments of W. Edwards. He found that as long as the temperature of the water is no more than fifteen or sixteen degrees above freezing-point (47°-48°), frogs will live the whole year round without once rising to the surface. In this condition they *breathe only by the skin.* He has shown the relation which surface-respiration bears to pulmonary respiration in these animals; and he finds that the skin exhales sufficient carbonic acid, and absorbs sufficient oxygen, to supply all their needs of languid life at this temperature. No sooner does the temperature of the water rise, than the vital activity of the frog increases; and with this increase there is a greater need of oxygen, a greater production of carbonic acid—in other words, a greater energy of Respiration, for which the skin no longer suffices, the lungs are called upon to do their work; they cannot do this work in the water; and if the frog be prevented from rising to the surface, it is prevented from breathing, and it perishes. We see this in spring. The frog, or newt, occasionally rises to expire carbonic acid, and absorb oxygen by its lungs. It then dives under the surface again. As the season

balance being destroyed, they sink into the condition of cold-blooded animals. If a young bird and an adult of the same species be exposed to the same degree of cold, although they have both the same temperature at starting, the young bird will in a short period be found to have a much *lower* temperature than the adult, because its production of heat has not been sufficiently rapid to keep pace with the loss. The physiological causes which determine this rapid loss in the insect, the hedgehog, and the young bird, have yet to be investigated, and may at once be surmised to be different in each case. In the insect, the rapid loss is probably owing to the smallness of its size, and the free penetration of the air through its body. In the hedgehog and young bird, the actual loss may not be greater than in other animals of the same size; but the effect of cold on their organisms may be such as to materially retard those processes on which the production of heat depends. So clearly is the production of heat regulated by the general condition of the organism, that, at different seasons of the year, the same organism will produce different amounts of heat at the same temperature. In winter, the organism is in its greatest heat-producing condition; in summer at its lowest. If subjected in summer to a temperature of zero, its power of resistance will be found very inadequate to such a degree of cold; whereas in winter its power of resistance is so great as to make this degree of cold perfectly endurable. The usual explanation is, that there is a greater amount of oxygen contained in a

similar volume of air in winter than in summer, so that at each inspiration a greater amount of combustion is rendered possible. But this is unsatisfactory. In the first place, in winter as in summer, the temperature of the mouth and lungs is constant, and the cold air entering would be warmed before the oxygen reached the blood; so that, unless the oxygen is in a different condition in winter than in summer (as some maintain), no solid argument can rest on the difference of the temperature of the air. In the second place, the experiments of W. Edwards do not admit of being thus explained. He placed sparrows in a glass vase, the air of which was maintained at freezing-point, in the months of February and July. This air, consequently, contained the same amount of oxygen in each case: and as the apparatus was in each case the same, and the birds the same, every variation in the result would be owing to the temporary condition of the organisms. In February the temperature of the birds only fell one degree centigrade during the first hour, remaining stationary there during the two succeeding hours; whereas in July it fell more than three degrees in the first hour, and continued to fall till the close of the third hour, when it had lost as much as six degrees. This experiment by no means tallies with the proposition laid down by Liebig, that "in different climates the quantity of oxygen introduced into the system by respiration, varies according to the temperature of the external air; the quantity of oxygen inspired increases with the loss of heat by external cooling; and the

balance being destroyed, they sink into the condition of cold-blooded animals. If a young bird and an adult of the same species be exposed to the same degree of cold, although they have both the same temperature at starting, the young bird will in a short period be found to have a much *lower* temperature than the adult, because its production of heat has not been sufficiently rapid to keep pace with the loss. The physiological causes which determine this rapid loss in the insect, the hedgehog, and the young bird, have yet to be investigated, and may at once be surmised to be different in each case. In the insect, the rapid loss is probably owing to the smallness of its size, and the free penetration of the air through its body. In the hedgehog and young bird, the actual loss may not be greater than in other animals of the same size; but the effect of cold on their organisms may be such as to materially retard those processes on which the production of heat depends. So clearly is the production of heat regulated by the general condition of the organism, that, at different seasons of the year, the same organism will produce different amounts of heat at the same temperature. In winter, the organism is in its greatest heat-producing condition; in summer at its lowest. If subjected in summer to a temperature of zero, its power of resistance will be found very inadequate to such a degree of cold; whereas in winter its power of resistance is so great as to make this degree of cold perfectly endurable. The usual explanation is, that there is a greater amount of oxygen contained in a

similar volume of air in winter than in summer, so that at each inspiration a greater amount of combustion is rendered possible. But this is unsatisfactory. In the first place, in winter as in summer, the temperature of the mouth and lungs is constant, and the cold air entering would be warmed before the oxygen reached the blood; so that, unless the oxygen is in a different condition in winter than in summer (as some maintain), no solid argument can rest on the difference of the temperature of the air. In the second place, the experiments of W. Edwards do not admit of being thus explained. He placed sparrows in a glass vase, the air of which was maintained at freezing-point, in the months of February and July. This air, consequently, contained the same amount of oxygen in each case: and as the apparatus was in each case the same, and the birds the same, every variation in the result would be owing to the temporary condition of the organisms. In February the temperature of the birds only fell one degree centigrade during the first hour, remaining stationary there during the two succeeding hours; whereas in July it fell more than three degrees in the first hour, and continued to fall till the close of the third hour, when it had lost as much as six degrees. This experiment by no means tallies with the proposition laid down by Liebig, that "in different climates the quantity of oxygen introduced into the system by respiration, varies according to the temperature of the external air; the quantity of oxygen inspired increases with the loss of heat by external cooling; and the

balance bein
of cold-blood
of the same s
cold, although
starting, the
to have a mu
cause its prod
rapid to keep
causes which
the hedgehog,
vestigated, and
in each case.
owing to the
tration of the a
and young bird
in other anima
cold on their
retard those pr
depends. So
lated by the ge
different season
produce differen
ture. In winte
producing cond
subjected in s
power of resist
such a degree
of resistance is
perfectly endura
there is a great

head above water. As the season advances, the
ter-newt also feels the need of occasionally quitting
water, and he will lie basking on the bit of stone
wood for hours together, descending into the water
the coolness of evening descends. To keep him
der water for many hours in the hot weather, is to
him. It is the same with frogs and toads; and
reason was made clear to us by the experiments of
Edwards. He found that as long as the tempera-
of the water is no more than fifteen or sixteen
grees above freezing-point (47°-48°), frogs will live
whole year round without once rising to the sur-
In this condition they *breathe only by the skin.*
has shown the relation which surface-respiration
ars to pulmonary respiration in these animals; and
finds that the skin exhales sufficient carbonic acid,
absorbs sufficient oxygen, to supply all their needs
languid life at this temperature. No sooner does
temperature of the water rise, than the vital ac-
vity of the frog increases; and with this increase
ere is a greater need of oxygen, a greater production
carbonic acid—in other words, a greater energy of
spiration, for which the skin no longer suffices, the
ngs are called upon to do their work; they cannot
this work in the water; and if the frog be
evented from rising to the surface, it is prevented
om breathing, and it perishes. We see this in
ring. The frog, or newt, occasionally rises to ex-
re carbonic acid, and absorb oxygen by its lungs. It
en dives under the surface again. As the season

balance being destroyed, they sink into the condition of cold-blooded animals. If a young bird and an adult of the same species be exposed to the same degree of cold, although they have both the same temperature at starting, the young bird will in a short period be found to have a much *lower* temperature than the adult, because its production of heat has not been sufficiently rapid to keep pace with the loss. The physiological causes which determine this rapid loss in the insect, the hedgehog, and the young bird, have yet to be investigated, and may at once be surmised to be different in each case. In the insect, the rapid loss is probably owing to the smallness of its size, and the free penetration of the air through its body. In the hedgehog and young bird, the actual loss may not be greater than in other animals of the same size; but the effect of cold on their organisms may be such as to materially retard those processes on which the production of heat depends. So clearly is the production of heat regulated by the general condition of the organism, that, at different seasons of the year, the same organism will produce different amounts of heat at the same temperature. In winter, the organism is in its greatest heat-producing condition; in summer at its lowest. If subjected in summer to a temperature of zero, its power of resistance will be found very inadequate to such a degree of cold; whereas in winter its power of resistance is so great as to make this degree of cold perfectly endurable. The usual explanation is, that there is a greater amount of oxygen contained in a

similar volume of air in winter than in summer, so that at each inspiration a greater amount of combustion is rendered possible. But this is unsatisfactory. In the first place, in winter as in summer, the temperature of the mouth and lungs is constant, and the cold air entering would be warmed before the oxygen reached the blood; so that, unless the oxygen is in a different condition in winter than in summer (as some maintain), no solid argument can rest on the difference of the temperature of the air. In the second place, the experiments of W. Edwards do not admit of being thus explained. He placed sparrows in a glass vase, the air of which was maintained at freezing-point, in the months of February and July. This air, consequently, contained the same amount of oxygen in each case: and as the apparatus was in each case the same, and the birds the same, every variation in the result would be owing to the temporary condition of the organisms. In February the temperature of the birds only fell one degree centigrade during the first hour, remaining stationary there during the two succeeding hours; whereas in July it fell more than three degrees in the first hour, and continued to fall till the close of the third hour, when it had lost as much as six degrees. This experiment by no means tallies with the proposition laid down by Liebig, that "in different climates the quantity of oxygen introduced into the system by respiration, varies according to the temperature of the external air; the quantity of oxygen inspired increases with the loss of heat by external cooling; and the

quantity of carbon or hydrogen necessary to combine with this oxygen must be increased in the same ratio;" for, on the contrary, we see here that the same temperature of the external air will at different seasons lower the temperature of the same bird *one* degree or *six* degrees. The cause cannot lie in the external air and its amount of oxygen, but in the organism, and its different conditions in winter and summer.

Has it never occurred to you, when standing beside a pond in early spring, that there was something paradoxical in the fact of frogs and toads crawling at the bottom, and never once rising to the surface to breathe? They are animals with lungs, and in summer live mostly on land, perishing, indeed, if unable to get out of the water from time to time; yet during the whole winter, late autumn, and early spring, they pass their time under water. Puzzled by this fact, we applied to a zoologist for an explanation, and received in reply one of those explanations with which the majority of mankind are willing to be content, namely, a restatement of the fact in different language. Our own experiments and observations gave no explanation. We found, for instance, the two species of newt—land and water newts—behave very differently. Both have gills when young, and lungs in a more developed condition. When the gills of the land-newt disappear, the possibility of living under water disappears: the animal quits the water for ever, and you meet him on your staircase, while his companion the water-newt is still in the aquarium, and only occasionally thrusting

his head above water. As the season advances, the water-newt also feels the need of occasionally quitting the water, and he will lie basking on the bit of stone or wood for hours together, descending into the water as the coolness of evening descends. To keep him under water for many hours in the hot weather, is to kill him. It is the same with frogs and toads; and the reason was made clear to us by the experiments of W. Edwards. He found that as long as the temperature of the water is no more than fifteen or sixteen degrees above freezing-point (47°-48°), frogs will live the whole year round without once rising to the surface. In this condition they *breathe only by the skin.* He has shown the relation which surface-respiration bears to pulmonary respiration in these animals; and he finds that the skin exhales sufficient carbonic acid, and absorbs sufficient oxygen, to supply all their needs of languid life at this temperature. No sooner does the temperature of the water rise, than the vital activity of the frog increases; and with this increase there is a greater need of oxygen, a greater production of carbonic acid—in other words, a greater energy of Respiration, for which the skin no longer suffices, the lungs are called upon to do their work; they cannot do this work in the water; and if the frog be prevented from rising to the surface, it is prevented from breathing, and it perishes. We see this in spring. The frog, or newt, occasionally rises to expire carbonic acid, and absorb oxygen by its lungs. It then dives under the surface again. As the season

advances, the risings become more frequent, till in the hot weather the frog lives chiefly on land, and the newt also is forced to expose itself to the air.

These facts do not accord with the hypothesis of Animal Heat being the direct effect of Respiration; for we do not see the frogs get warmer because their Respiration has become more extensive, but their Respiration becomes more extensive because they are warmer: warmth has increased the activity of their vital functions, and has increased Respiration, which is one of these. We know how intimately dependent the vital functions are on temperature, and in Chap. VI. we saw how Respiration in the cold-blooded animals uniformly increases in energy as the external warmth increases, up to a certain point; and we are therefore able to understand how it is that a low degree of vital activity will be found coincident with a feeble respiration and low temperature, while a high degree of vital activity is coincident with energetic Respiration and a high temperature, without our being forced to admit that this coincidence implies a direct causal relation between energy of Respiration and Animal Heat.

In conclusion, we may say that the hypothesis generally adopted respecting the production of Animal Heat is very far from possessing the evidence demanded by science. It may be true; we do not think it is true; and we are persuaded that it is not proven. It rests on two pillars, the very foundations of which are insecure. The first of these is the chemical hypothesis of direct oxidation of the carbon and hydrogen. The second is the assumed invariableness of the relation between intensity of heat and energy of respiration. We are not warranted in affirming either of these propositions; all we are warranted in affirming is this: Animal Heat is evolved in various chemical and physical changes which occur in the processes of life, and is consequently in direct correspondence with their energy, rising in intensity as they become more active, and falling as they fall. We have every reason to believe that oxygen is the great *inciter* of such changes, the indispensable condition of vital activity; but we have no direct evidence that these changes are all oxidations; we have direct evidence that some of them are not oxidations, but are dependent on Respiration only as one organic process is dependent on another, and as Respiration itself is dependent on them.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

MESSRS BLACKWOOD & SONS'

PUBLICATIONS.

SECOND EDITION.

Narrative of the Earl of Elgin's Mission to China and Japan.

By Laurence Oliphant,
Private Secretary to Lord Elgin.

Illustrated with numerous Engravings in Chromo-Lithography, Maps, and Engravings on Wood, from Original Drawings and Photographs.

In Two Volumes Octavo, price £2, 2s.

St Stephen's: A Poem.

Originally published in *Blackwood's Magazine.*

This Poem is intended to give succinct Sketches of our principal Parliamentary Orators, commencing with the origin of Parliamentary Oratory (in the Civil Wars), and closing with the late Sir Robert Peel.

Foolscap Octavo, price 5s.

Conquest and Colonisation in North Africa;

Being the substance of a Series of Letters from Algeria published in the *Times*, and now by permission collected. With Introduction and Supplement, containing the most recent French and other Information on Morocco.

By George Wingrove Cooke,
Author of "China in 1857-1858."

Crown Octavo, with a Map, price 5s.

Fleets and Navies.

By Captain Charles Hamley, R.M.

Originally published in *Blackwood's Magazine.*

Crown Octavo, price 6s.

Complete Library Edition of Sir Edward Bulwer Lytton's Novels.

In Volumes of a convenient and handsome form. Printed from a large readable type. Published monthly, price 5s. per Volume. Vols. I. to VIII. are published.

"It is of the handiest of sizes; the paper is good; and the type, which seems to be new, is very clear and beautiful. There are no pictures. The whole charm of the presentment of the volume consists in its handiness, and the tempting clearness and beauty of the type, which almost converts into a pleasure the mere act of following the printer's lines, and leaves the author's mind free to exert its unobstructed force upon the reader."—*Examiner.*

"Nothing could be better as to size, type, paper, and general getting up. The Bulwer Novels will range on the same shelf with the Scott Novels; and appearing, as these two series will do, together, and in a mode tempting readers, old and young, to go through them once again for pleasure and profit, will inevitably lead to comparison of the genius, the invention, the worldly knowledge, and artistic skill of the great Scottish and English writers."—*Athenæum.*

New General Atlas.

Keith Johnston's Royal Atlas of Modern Geography.

Part V., now published, contains—

AUSTRIAN EMPIRE, Western Sheet, comprising Austria Proper, the Tyrol, Bohemia, Venetia, &c.

AUSTRIAN EMPIRE, Eastern Sheet—Hungary, Galicia, Transylvania, the Servian Woiwodschafts, and the Banat of Temes, Slavonia, and the Military Frontier.

NEW SOUTH WALES, SOUTH AUSTRALIA, & VICTORIA.

OCEANIA, WESTERN AUSTRALIA, TASMANIA, & NEW ZEALAND.

WEST INDIA ISLANDS & CENTRAL AMERICA.

This Atlas will be completed in Ten Parts, price 10s. 6d. each, and will form a handsome portable Volume, size 20×13½ inches, consisting of a series of 48 original and authentic Maps, constructed by ALEX. KEITH JOHNSTON, F.R.G.S., Author of the "Physical Atlas," &c., and beautifully engraved and coloured in the finest style by W. & A. K. JOHNSTON, with a Special Index to each Map.

A Cruise in Japanese Waters.

By Captain SHERARD OSBORN, C.B.,
Author of "Leaves from an Arctic Journal," "Quedah," &c.

A New Edition. Crown Octavo, price 5s.

"The fascination of this strange country was undoubtedly great, for it is transferred to every page of Captain Osborn's narrative."—*The Times.*

"One of the most charming little books that for many a day we have had the good fortune to peruse."—*Literary Gazette.*

"One lays down the book with an irresistible desire to pack up all one has and start at once for Japan."—*Evening Herald.*

"In reading many pages of this book we almost feel that the action of the events is proceeding before us. . . . . . There is not a dull or uninteresting line in the book."—*Morning Herald.*

Lays of the Scottish Cavaliers, and other Poems.

By W. Edmondstoune Aytoun, D.C.L.,
Professor of Rhetoric and Belles-Lettres in the University of Edinburgh.

Twelfth Edition, price 7s. 6d.

"Mr Aytoun's *Lays* are truly beautiful, and are perfect poems of their class, pregnant with fire, with patriotic ardour, with loyal zeal, with exquisite pathos, with noble passion. Who can hear the opening lines descriptive of Edinburgh after the great battle of Flodden, and not feel that the minstrel's soul has caught the genuine inspiration?"—*Morning Post.*

Bothwell: A Dramatic Poem.

By the same Author.

Third Edition, price 7s. 6d.

The Ballads of Scotland.

Edited by Professor Aytoun.

Second Edition. Two Volumes, price 12s.

"No country can boast of a richer collection of Ballads than Scotland, and no Editor for these Ballads could be found more accomplished than Professor Aytoun. He has sent forth two beautiful volumes which range with *Percy's Reliques*—which, for completeness and accuracy, leave little to be desired—which must henceforth be considered as the standard edition of the Scottish Ballads, and which we commend as a model to any among ourselves who may think of doing like service to the English Ballads."—*The Times.*

Firmilian: or, The Student of Badajoz.

A SPASMODIC TRAGEDY.

Price 6s.

"Without doubt, whether we regard it as a satire or as a complete drama, *Firmilian* is one of the most finished poems of the day. Unity is preserved, and the intensity of the 'spasmodic' energy thrown into the narrative carries the reader through every page, while the graces of poetic fancy, and the touches of deep thought scattered throughout, challenge comparison with selections from the most modern poems."—*Liverpool Albion.*

The Book of Ballads.

Edited by Bon Gaultier.

Fifth Edition, with numerous Illustrations by Doyle, Leech, and Crowquill.

Gilt edges, price 8s. 6d.

Poems and Ballads of Goethe.

Translated by Professor AYTOUN and THEODORE MARTIN.

Second Edition, price 6s.

"There is no doubt that these are the best translations of Goethe's marvellously-cut gems which have yet been published."—*The Times.*

The Poems of Felicia Hemans.

Complete in One Volume, Royal Octavo, with portrait by Finden, price 21s.

ANOTHER EDITION, with MEMOIR by her SISTER, Seven Vols., Foolscap, 35s.

ANOTHER EDITION, in Six Vols., cloth, gilt edges, 24s.

"Of no modern writer can it be affirmed with less hesitation, that she has become an English classic; nor, until human nature becomes very different from what it now is, can we imagine the least probability that the music of her lays will cease to soothe the ear, or the beauty of her sentiment to charm the gentle heart."

The following Works of Mrs HEMANS are sold separately, bound in cloth, gilt edges, price 4s. each :—

RECORDS OF WOMAN.
FOREST SANCTUARY.
SONGS OF THE AFFECTIONS.
DRAMATIC WORKS.
TALES AND HISTORIC SCENES.
MORAL AND RELIGIOUS POEMS.

The Course of Time: A Poem.

By ROBERT POLLOK, A.M.

An Illustrated Edition, in Square Octavo, bound in cloth, richly gilt, £1, 1s.

"There has been no modern poem in the English language, of the class to which the 'Course of Time' belongs, since Milton wrote, that can be compared to it. In the present instance the artistic talents of Messrs FOSTER, CLAYTON, TENNIEL, EVANS, DALZIEL, GREEN, and WOODS, have been employed in giving expression to the sublimity of the language, by equally exquisite illustrations, all of which are of the highest class."—*Bell's Messenger.*

ANOTHER EDITION, being the Twenty-second, in Foolscap Octavo, price 7s. 6d.

The Poetical Works of D. M. Moir (Delta).

Including "Domestic Verses," and Life by THOMAS AIRD, and a Portrait. Two Volumes, Foolscap Octavo, price 14s.

Works of Professor Wilson.

Edited by his SON-IN-LAW, Professor FERRIER.

In Twelve Vols., Crown Octavo, price £3, 12s.

The following are sold separately:—

NOCTES AMBROSIANÆ. Four Vols. 24s.
ESSAYS, CRITICAL AND IMAGINATIVE. Four Vols. 24s.
RECREATIONS OF CHRISTOPHER NORTH. Two Vols. 12s.
TALES. One Vol. 6s.
POEMS. One Vol. 6s.

Works of Samuel Warren, D.C.L.

Uniform Edition, Five Vols., price 24s.

The following are sold separately:—

DIARY OF A PHYSICIAN. 5s. 6d.
TEN THOUSAND A YEAR. Two Vols. 9s.
NOW AND THEN. 2s. 6d.
MISCELLANIES. 5s.

Works of Thomas M'Crie, D.D.

Edited by his SON, Professor M'CRIE.

Uniform Edition, in Four Vols., *Crown Octavo, price 24s.*

The following are sold separately, viz.—

LIFE OF JOHN KNOX. 6s.
LIFE OF ANDREW MELVILLE. 6s.
HISTORY OF THE REFORMATION IN ITALY. 4s.
HISTORY OF THE REFORMATION IN SPAIN. 4s. 6d.
REVIEW OF "TALES OF MY LANDLORD," AND SERMONS. 6s.

Curran and his Contemporaries.

By CHARLES PHILLIPS, Esq., A.B.

A New Edition, Crown Octavo, price 7s. 6d.

"Certainly one of the most extraordinary [illegible] [illegible] library should be without it."—Lord Brougham.

"Never, perhaps, was there [illegible] the same canvass."—Times.

Life of John, Duke of Marlborough.

WITH SOME ACCOUNT OF HIS CONTEMPORARIES.

By Sir ARCHIBALD ALISON, Bart., D.C.L.

Third Edition. Two Vols. [illegible]

Tales from "Blackwood."

Publishing in Monthly Numbers, price 6d., and in Volumes Quarterly, price 1s. 6d., bound in cloth.

The Volumes published contain—

VOL. I. The Glenmutchkin Railway.—Vanderdecken's Message Home.—The Floating Beacon.—Colonna the Painter.—Napoleon.—A Legend of Gibraltar.—The Iron Shroud.

VOL. II. Lazaro's Legacy.—A Story without a Tail.—Faustus and Queen Elizabeth.—How I became a Yeoman.—Devereux Hall.—The Metempsychosis.—College Theatricals.

VOL. III. A Reading Party in the Long Vacation.—Father Tom and the Pope.—La Petite Madelaine.—Bob Burke's Duel with Ensign Brady.—The Headsman: A Tale of Doom.—The Wearyful Woman.

VOL. IV. How I stood for the Dreepdaily Burghs.—First and Last.—The Duke's Dilemma: A Chronicle of Niesenstein.—The Old Gentleman's Teetotum.—"Woe to us when we lose the Watery Wall."—My College Friends: Charles Russell, the Gentleman Commoner.—The Magic Lay of the One-Horse Chay.

VOL. V. Adventures in Texas.—How we got Possession of the Tuileries.—Captain Paton's Lament.—The Village Doctor.—A Singular Letter from Southern Africa.

VOL. VI. My Friend the Dutchman.—My College Friends—No. II.: Horace Leicester.—The Emerald Studs.—My College Friends—No. III.: Mr W. Wellington Hurst.—Christine: A Dutch Story.—The Man in the Bell.

VOL. VII. My English Acquaintance.—The Murderer's Last Night.—Narration of Certain Uncommon Things that did formerly happen to Me, Herbert Willis, B.D.—The Wags.—The Wet Wooing: A Narrative of '98.—Ben-na-Groich.

VOL. VIII. The Surveyor's Tale. By Professor Aytoun.—The Forrest-Race Romance.—Di Vasari: A Tale of Florence.—Sigismund Fatello.—The Boxes.

Adam Bede.

By GEORGE ELIOT.

Seventh Edition. Two Vols., Foolscap Octavo, price 12s.

Scenes of Clerical Life.

THE SAD FORTUNES OF AMOS BARTON—MR GILFIL'S LOVE STORY—JANET'S REPENTANCE.

By GEORGE ELIOT.

Second Edition. Two Vols., Foolscap Octavo, price 12s.

The Mill on the Floss.

By GEORGE ELIOT,
Author of "Scenes of Clerical Life," and "Adam Bede."

In Three Volumes, price £1, 11s. 6d.

Salmon-Casts and Stray Shots:

BEING FLY-LEAVES FROM THE NOTE-BOOK OF JOHN COLQUHOUN, Author of the "Moor and the Loch," &c.

Second Edition, Foolscap, 5s.

What will he do with it?

By Pisistratus Caxton.

Originally published in *Blackwood's Magazine.*

Four Volumes, Post Octavo, price £2, 2s.

Lady Lee's Widowhood.

By Lieut.-Col. E. B. Hamley.

Third Edition. With Engravings. Crown Octavo, price 6s.

"A quiet humour—an easy, graceful style—a deep though confident knowledge of human nature in its better and more degrading aspects—a delicate and exquisite appreciation of womanly character—an admirable faculty of description, and great tact [illegible] the qualities that command the reader's interest and respect from beginning to end."—*The Times.*

The Athelings; or, The Three Gifts.

By Mrs Oliphant.

Three Volumes, Post Octavo, price £1, 11s. 6d.

"It is quite charming. The beginning is perfect, and may rank with any picture of an interior that we know. In *The Athelings* Mrs Oliphant exercises with the greatest [illegible] her talent for picture-painting. There is not a stroke or a shade too much or too little. A sweeter story than *The Athelings*, or one more beautifully written, we have not read [illegible] many a long day."—*Globe.*

Zaidee: A Romance.

By the same Author.

Three Volumes, Post Octavo, price £1, 11s. 6d.

Katie Stewart: A True Story.

By the same Author.

Second Edition, Foolscap, price [illegible]

The Quiet Heart.

By the same Author.

Second Edition, Post Octavo, price [illegible]

Cheap Editions of Popular Works.

Lights and Shadows of [illegible]

The Trials of [illegible] of Scottish Life. [illegible]

The Foresters. [illegible] Foolscap, [illegible]

Tom Cringle's Log. [illegible]

The [illegible] Volume. [illegible]

The Life of [illegible]

The Subaltern. [illegible]

Peninsular [illegible]

Night at Mess. [illegible]

The [illegible]

Valerius. [illegible]

Reginald [illegible]

Some Passages [illegible]

Annals [illegible]

Sir Andrew [illegible]

The [illegible]

The [illegible]

Life in [illegible]

The Sketcher.

By the Rev. JOHN EAGLES, A.M., Oxon.

Originally published in *Blackwood's Magazine.*

In Post Octavo, price 10s. 6d.

"There is an earnest and vigorous thought about them, a genial and healthy tone of feeling, and a flowing and frequently eloquent style of language, that make this book one of the most pleasant companions that you can take with you, if you are bound for the woodland or pastoral scenery of rural England, especially if you go to study the picturesque, whether as an observer or as an artist."

Essays.

By the Rev. JOHN EAGLES, A.M., Oxon.

Originally published in *Blackwood's Magazine.*

Post Octavo, 10s. 6d.

Contents—

Church Music, and other Parochials—Medical Attendance, and other Parochials—A few Hours at Hampton Court—Grandfathers and Grandchildren—Sitting for a Portrait—Are there not great Boasters among us?—Temperance and Teetotal Societies—Thackeray's Lectures: Swift—The Crystal Palace—Civilisation: the Census—The Beggar's Legacy.

Thorndale: or, The Conflict of Opinions.

By WILLIAM SMITH,
Author of "A Discourse on Ethics," &c.

A New Edition, Crown Octavo, price 10s. 6d.

"More literary gems could be picked from this than almost any recent volume we know. It is a repository of select thoughts—the fruit of much reflection, much reading, and many years."—*Scotsman.*

"It is long since we have met with a more remarkable or worthy book. Mr Smith is always thoughtful and suggestive. He has been entirely successful in carrying out his wish to produce a volume, in reading which, a thoughtful man will often pause with his finger between the leaves, and muse upon what he has read. We judge that the book must have been written slowly, and at intervals, from its affluence of beautiful thought. No mind could have turned off such material with the equable flow of a stream. We know few works in which there may be found so many fine thoughts, light-bringing illustrations, and happy turns of expression, to invite the reader's pencil."—*Fraser's Magazine.*

Lectures on Metaphysics.

By Sir WILLIAM HAMILTON, Bart.

Edited by the Rev. H. L. MANSEL, B.D., and JOHN VEITCH, A.M.

In Two Vols., Octavo, price 24s.

Institutes of Metaphysic:

THE THEORY OF KNOWING AND BEING.

By JAMES F. FERRIER, A.B., Oxon.,
Professor of Moral Philosophy and Political Economy, St Andrews.

Second Edition, Crown Octavo, 10s. 6d.

Diversities of Faults in Christian Believers;

By the Very Rev. E. B. Ramsay, M.A., F.R.S.E.,
Dean of the Diocese of Edinburgh.

In Foolscap Octavo, price 4s. 6d.

Diversities of Christian Character.

Illustrated in the Lives of the Four great Apostles.

By the same Author.

Uniform with the above, price 4s. 6d.

Religion in Common Life:

A Sermon preached in Crathie Church, October 14, 1855, before Her Majesty the Queen and Prince Albert. Published by Her Majesty's Command.

By the Rev. John Caird, D.D.

Bound in cloth, 8d. Cheap Edition, 3d.

Sermons.

By the Rev. John Caird, D.D.,
Minister of West Park Church, Glasgow.

In Post Octavo, price 7s. 6d.

Prayers for Social and Family Worship.

Prepared by a Committee of the General Assembly of the Church of Scotland, and specially designed for the use of Soldiers, Sailors, Colonists, Sojourners in India, and other Persons, at Home or Abroad, who are deprived of the Ordinary Services of a Christian Ministry. Published by Authority of the Committee.

In Crown Octavo, bound in cloth, price 4s.

Prayers for Social and Family Worship.

Being a Cheap Edition of the above.

Price 1s. 6d.

Theism:

THE WITNESS OF REASON AND NATURE TO AN ALL-WISE AND BENEFICENT CREATOR.—(Burnett Prize Treatise.)

By the Rev. J. Tulloch, D.D.,

Principal, and Primarius Professor of Theology, St Mary's College, St Andrews.

Crown Octavo, 10s. 6d.

Lives of the Queens of Scotland,

AND ENGLISH PRINCESSES CONNECTED WITH THE REGAL SUCCESSION.

By AGNES STRICKLAND.

With Portraits and Historical Vignettes. Complete in Eight Vols., price £4, 4s.

History of Europe,

FROM THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE FRENCH REVOLUTION TO THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO.

By Sir ARCHIBALD ALISON, Bart., D.C.L.

A New Edition of the Library Edition is in the Press.
Crown Octavo Edition, 20 vols., price £6.
People's Edition, 12 vols., double cols., £2, 8s.; and Index Vol., 3s.

The History of Europe,

FROM THE FALL OF NAPOLEON TO THE ACCESSION OF LOUIS NAPOLEON.

By Sir ARCHIBALD ALISON, Bart., D.C.L.

Complete in Nine Vols., price £6, 7s. 6d. Uniform with the Library Edition of the Author's "History of Europe, from the Commencement of the French Revolution."

Atlas to Alison's History of Europe;

Containing 109 Maps and Plans of Countries, Battles, Sieges, and Sea-Fights. Constructed by A. KEITH JOHNSTON, F.R.S.E. With Vocabulary of Military and Marine Terms.

Library Edition, £3, 3s.; People's Edition, £1, 11s. 6d.

History of Greece under Foreign Domination.

By GEORGE FINLAY, LL.D., Athens.

Five Volumes Octavo—viz.:

Greece under the Romans. B.C. 146 to A.D. 717. A Historical View of the condition of the Greek Nation from its Conquest by the Romans until the Extinction of the Roman Power in the East. Second Edition, 16s.

History of the Byzantine Empire. A.D. 716 to 1204; and of the Greek Empire of Nicæa and Constantinople, A.D. 1204 to 1453. Two Volumes, £1, 7s. 6d.

Mediæval Greece and Trebizond. The History of Greece, from its Conquest by the Crusaders to its Conquest by the Turks, A.D. 1204 to 1566; and History of the Empire of Trebizond, A.D. 1204 to 1461. Price 12s.

Greece under Othoman and Venetian Domination. A.D. 1453 to 1821. Price 10s. 6d.

"His book is worthy to take its place among the remarkable works on Greek history, which form one of the chief glories of English scholarship. The history of Greece is but half told without it."—*London Guardian.*

"His work is therefore learned and profound. It throws a flood of light upon an important though obscure portion of Grecian history. . . . In the essential requisites of fidelity, accuracy, and learning, Mr Finlay bears a favourable comparison with any historical writer of our day."—*North American Review.*

The Eighteen Christian Centuries.

By the Rev. James White.

Third Edition, with Analytical Table of Contents, and a Copious Index.
Octavo, price 7s. 6d.

"He goes to work upon the only true principle, and produces a picture that at once satisfies truth, arrests the memory, and fills the imagination. When they (Index and Analytical Contents) are supplied, it will be difficult to lay hands on any book of the kind more useful and more entertaining."—*Times*, Review of first edition.

"At once the most picturesque and the most informing volume on Modern History to which the general reader could be referred."—*Nonconformist.*

"His faculty for distinguishing the wheat from the chaff, and of rejecting the mere rubbish, while leaving no stray grain unsifted, makes the 'Eighteen Christian Centuries' an invaluable manual alike to the old and young reader."—*Globe.*

"Mr White comes to the assistance of those who would know something of the history of the Eighteen Christian Centuries; and those who want to know still more than he gives them, will find that he has perfected a plan which catches the attention and fixes the distinctive feature of each century in the memory."—*Wesleyan Times.*

History of France,

FROM THE EARLIEST PERIOD TO THE YEAR 1848.

By the Rev. James White,
Author of the "Eighteen Christian Centuries."

Post Octavo, price 9s.

"Mr White's 'History of France,' in a single volume of some 600 pages, contains every leading incident worth the telling, and abounds in word-painting whereof a paragraph has often as much active life in it as one of those inch-square etchings of the great Callot, in which may be clearly seen whole armies contending in bloody arbitrament, and as many incidents of battle as may be gazed at in the miles of canvass in the military picture galleries at Versailles."—*Athenæum.*

"An excellent and comprehensive compendium of French history, quite above the standard of a school-book, and particularly well adapted for the libraries of literary institutions."—*National Review.*

"We have in this volume the history of France told rapidly and distinctly by a narrator who has fancy and judgment to assist him in seizing rightly and presenting in the most effective manner both the main incidents of his tale and the main principles involved in them. Mr White is, in our time, the only writer of short histories or summaries of history, that may be read for pleasure as well as instruction, that are not less true for being told in an effective way, and that give equal pleasure to the cultivated and to the uncultivated reader."—*Examiner.*

Leaders of the Reformation:

LUTHER, CALVIN, LATIMER, AND KNOX.

By the Rev. John Tulloch, D.D.,
Principal, and Primarius Professor of Theology, St Mary's College, St Andrews.

Crown Octavo, price 5s.

"We are not acquainted with any work in which so much solid information upon the leading aspects of the great Reformation is presented in so well-packed and pleasing a form."—*Witness.*

"The idea was excellent, and most ably has it been executed. Each Essay is a lesson in sound thinking as well as in good writing. The deliberate perusal of the volume will be an exercise for which all, whether young or old, will be the better. The book is erudite, and throughout marked by great independence of thought. We very highly prize the publication."—*British Standard.*

"We cannot but congratulate both Dr Tulloch and the university of which he is so prominent a member on this evidence of returning life in Presbyterian thought. It seems as though the chains of an outgrown Puritanism were at last falling from the limbs of Scotch theology. There is a width of sympathy and a power of writing in this little volume which fills us with great expectation. We trust that Dr Tulloch will consider it as being merely the basis of a more complete and erudite inquiry."—*Literary Gazette.*

"The style is admirable in force and in pathos, and the book one to be altogether recommended, both for the merits of those of whom it treats, and for that which the writer unconsciously reveals of his own character."—*Globe.*

The Chemistry of Common Life.

By Professor JOHNSTON.

A New Edition, Edited by G. H. LEWES.

Illustrated with numerous Engravings. In Two Vols., Foolscap, price 11s. 6

The Physiology of Common Life.

By GEORGE H. LEWES.

Illustrated with numerous Engravings. Two Vols., 12s.

Contents—Hunger and Thirst.—Food and Drink.—Digestion and Indigestion.—The Str ture and Uses of the Blood.—The Circulation.—Respiration and Suffocation.—W we are Warm, and how we keep so.—Feeling and Thinking.—The Mind and t Brain.—Our Senses and Sensations.—Sleep and Dreams.—The Qualities we Inhe from our Parents.—Life and Death.

Sea-Side Studies.

By GEORGE HENRY LEWES,
Author of "Physiology of Common Life," &c.

Second Edition, Illustrated with Engravings, price 6s. 6d.

The Physical Atlas of Natural Phenomena.

By ALEX. KEITH JOHNSTON, F.R.S.E., &c.,
Geographer to the Queen for Scotland.

A New and Enlarged Edition, consisting of 35 Folio Plates, 27 smaller on printed in Colours, with 135 pages of Letterpress, and Index.

Imperial Folio, half-bound morocco, £12, 12s.

Atlas of Astronomy.

A complete Series of Illustrations of the Heavenly Bodies, drawn with t greatest care from Original and Authentic Documents, and printed Colours by Alex. Keith Johnston.

Edited by J. R. HIND.

Imperial Quarto, half-bound morocco, 21s.

The Geology of Pennsylvania.

A Government Survey; with a General View of the GEOLOGY OF THE UNITED STATES, Essays on the Coal-Formation and its Fossils, and a Description of the Coal-Fields of North America and Great Britain.

By Professor HENRY DARWIN ROGERS, F.R.S., F.G.S.,
Professor of Natural History in the University of Glasgow.

With Seven large Maps, and numerous Illustrations engraved on Copper and on Wood. In Three Volumes, Royal Quarto, £8, 8s.

Introductory Text-Book of Geology.

By DAVID PAGE, F.G.S.

Third Edition, with Engravings. In Crown Octavo, price 1s. 6d.

"It has not been often our good fortune to examine a text-book on science of which we could express an opinion so entirely favourable as we are enabled to do of Mr Page's little work."—*Athenæum.*

Advanced Text-Book of Geology,

DESCRIPTIVE AND INDUSTRIAL.

By DAVID PAGE, F.G.S.

Second Edition, enlarged, with numerous Engravings, 6s.

"An admirable book on Geology. It is from no invidious desire to underrate other works—it is the simple expression of justice, which causes us to assign to Mr Page's *Advanced Text-Book* the very first place among geological works addressed to students, at least among those which have come before us. We have read every word of it, with care and with delight, never hesitating as to its meaning, never detecting the omission of anything needful in a popular and succinct exposition of a rich and varied subject."—*Leader.*

"It is therefore with unfeigned pleasure that we record our appreciation of his *Advanced Text-Book of Geology*. We have carefully read this truly satisfactory book, and do not hesitate to say that it is an excellent compendium of the great facts of Geology, and written in a truthful and philosophic spirit."—*Edinburgh Philosophical Journal.*

"We know of no introduction containing a larger amount of information in the same space, and which we could more cordially recommend to the geological student."—*Athenæum.*

Handbook of Geological Terms and Geology.

By DAVID PAGE, F.G.S.

In Crown Octavo, price 6s.

"'To the student, miner, engineer, architect, agriculturist, and others, who may have occasion to deal with geological facts, and yet who might not be inclined to turn up half a dozen volumes, or go through a course of geological readings for an explanation of the term in question,' Mr Page has carried out his object with the most complete success. His book amply fulfils the promise contained in its title, constituting a handbook not only of geological terms but of the science of geology. It will not only be absolutely indispensable to the student, but will be invaluable as a complete and handy book of reference even to the advanced geologist."—*Literary Gazette.*

"There is no more earnest living practical worker in geology than Mr David Page. To his excellent *Introductory Text-Book of Geology* and his *Advanced Text-Book of Geology, Descriptive and Industrial*, he has now added an admirable system of geological terms, with ample and clearly written explanatory notices, such as all geological observers, whether they are able professors and distinguished lecturers, or mere inquirers upon the threshold of the science, must find to be of the highest value."—*Practical Mechanics' Journal.*

The Geological Examinator.

CONTAINING PROGRESSIVE SERIES OF QUESTIONS ADAPTED TO THE ABOVE WORKS.

By DAVID PAGE, F.G.S.

Price Sixpence.

The Book of the Farm.

By Henry Stephens, F.R.S.E.

A New Edition. In Two Volumes, large Octavo, with upwards of 600 Engravings, price £3, half-bound.

"The best practical book I have ever met with."—*Professor Johnston.*

"One of the completest works on agriculture of which our literature can boast."—*Agricultural Gazette.*

Book of Farm Implements and Machines.

By James Slight and R. Scott Burn.

Edited by Henry Stephens, F.R.S.E.

Illustrated with 876 Engravings. One large Volume, uniform with the "Book of the Farm," price £2, 2s.

"The author has omitted, most judiciously, those machines not now used, and he has confined himself to those in actual operation, thereby rendering a great service to the agricultural mind, which is liable to confusion in cases of much complication. Some of the machines described are commended, and deserve the commendation; others, on the contrary, are condemned, and it would seem with equal justice: but the character of all is stated distinctly. . . . . . Full, complete, and perfect in all its parts; honestly compiled, and skilfully illustrated with numerous and valuable engravings and diagrams, it is not saying too much to state that there is no parallel to this important work in any country of Europe, and that its value to the agriculturist is almost incalculable."—*Observer.*

The Book of the Garden.

By Charles M'Intosh.

In Two large Volumes, Royal Octavo, published separately.

Vol. I.—On the Formation of Gardens—Construction, Heating, and Ventilation of Fruit and Plant-Houses, Pits, Frames, and other Garden Structures, with Practical Details. Illustrated by 1073 Engravings, pp. 776. Price £2, 10s.

Vol. II.—PRACTICAL GARDENING contains: Directions for the Culture of the Kitchen Garden, the Hardy-Fruit Garden, the Forcing Garden, and Flower Garden, including Fruit and Plant Houses, with Select Lists of Vegetables, Fruits, and Plants. Pp. 868, with 279 Engravings. Price £1, 17s. 6d.

The Year-Book of Agricultural Facts.

Edited by R. Scott Burn.

In Foolscap Octavo, price 5s.

A Handy Book on Property Law.

By Lord St Leonards.

A New Edition, enlarged, with Index, Crown Octavo, price 3s. 6d.

"Less than 200 pages serve to arm us with the ordinary precautions to which we should attend in selling, buying, mortgaging, leasing, settling, and devising estates. We are informed of our relations to our property, to our wives and children, and of our liabilities as trustees or executors, in a little book for the million, a book which the author tenders to the *profanum vulgus* as even capable of 'beguiling a few hours in a railway carriage.'"—*The Times.*

Works of Professor J. F. W. Johnston.

A Catechism of Agricultural Chemistry and Geology. 1s.

Elements of Agricultural Chemistry and Geology. 6s. 6d.

Instructions for the Analysis of Soils, Minerals, Manures, &c. 3s.

On the Use of Lime in Agriculture. 6s.

Experimental Agriculture. 8s.

Notes on North America—
AGRICULTURAL, ECONOMICAL, AND SOCIAL.
Two Volumes, Post Octavo, 21s.

Rural Economy of England, Scotland, and Ireland.

By Leonce de Lavergne.
Translated from the French. With Notes by a Scottish Farmer.
Octavo, price 12s.

The Architecture of the Farm.

A SERIES OF DESIGNS FOR FARM HOUSES, FARM STEADINGS, FACTORS' HOUSES, AND COTTAGES.
By John Starforth, Architect.
Sixty-two Engravings. Medium Quarto, price £2, 2s.

Catechism of Practical Agriculture.

By Henry Stephens, F.R.S.E.,
Author of the "Book of the Farm."
With Numerous Engravings on Wood, price 1s.

Stable Economy.

A TREATISE ON THE MANAGEMENT OF HORSES.
By John Stewart, V.S.
Sixth Edition, Foolscap, price 6s. 6d.

Handbook of the Mechanical Arts

CONCERNED IN THE CONSTRUCTION AND ARRANGEMENT OF DWELLINGS AND OTHER BUILDINGS;
Including Carpentry, Smith-work, Iron-framing, Brick-making, Columns, Cements, Well-sinking, Enclosing of Land, Road-making, &c.
By Robert Scott Burn,
One of the Authors of the "Book of Farm Implements and Machines."
Crown Octavo, Illustrated with 504 Engravings on Wood, price 6s. 6d.

NEW WORKS.

In Two Volumes, price 24s.,

LECTURES ON LOGIC.

By SIR WILLIAM HAMILTON, Bart.,

Edited by the Rev. H. L. MANSEL, B.D.,
and JOHN VEITCH, A.M.

In Two Volumes, price 21s.,

LECTURES ON THE HISTORY OF TH CHURCH OF SCOTLAND.

By the Late Rev. JOHN LEE, D.D., LL.D.,
Principal of the University of Edinburgh.

THE BOOK OF FARM BUILDING

THEIR ARRANGEMENT AND CONSTRUCTION.

By HENRY STEPHENS, F.R.S.E., & R. SCOTT BURN.

In large Octavo, with numerous Engravings.

[*In the P*

A Third Edition, enlarged, of

THE FORESTER.

A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE FORMATION OF PLANTATIONS, T
PLANTING, REARING, AND MANAGEMENT OF FOREST TREES, ETC.

By JAMES BROWN,
Wood-Manager, Grantown, Strathspey.

[*In the P*

In Crown Octavo, price 5s.,

AN INQUIRY INTO THE NATURE AND CAUSE OF THE PREVAILING DISEASE AND PRESENT CONDITION OF T LARCH PLANTATIONS IN GREAT BRITAIN.

By CHARLES M'INTOSH,
Associate of the Linnæan Society, &c. &c.

LANE MEDICAL LIBRARY

To avoid fine, this book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below.

F38 Lewes, G. H.
L67 The physiology of common life. 14517
1859
v. 1

NAME	DATE DUE